THE

English Rogue:

Continued in the Life of

MERITON LATROON,

AND OTHER

EXTRAVAGANTS.

Comprehending the moſt Eminent.

CHEATS

OF

BOTH SEXES.

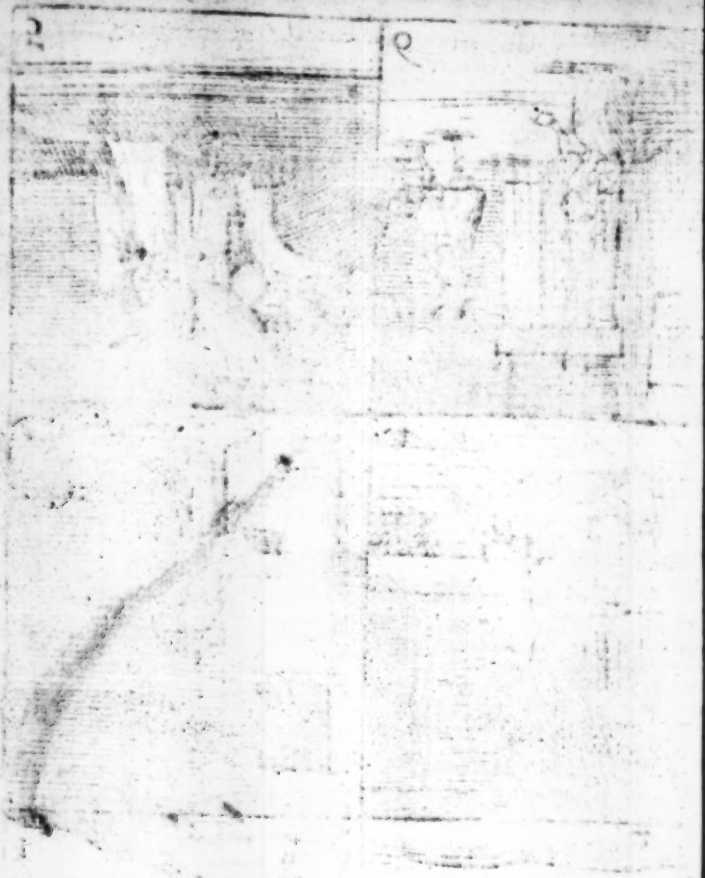
The *Fourth* Part.

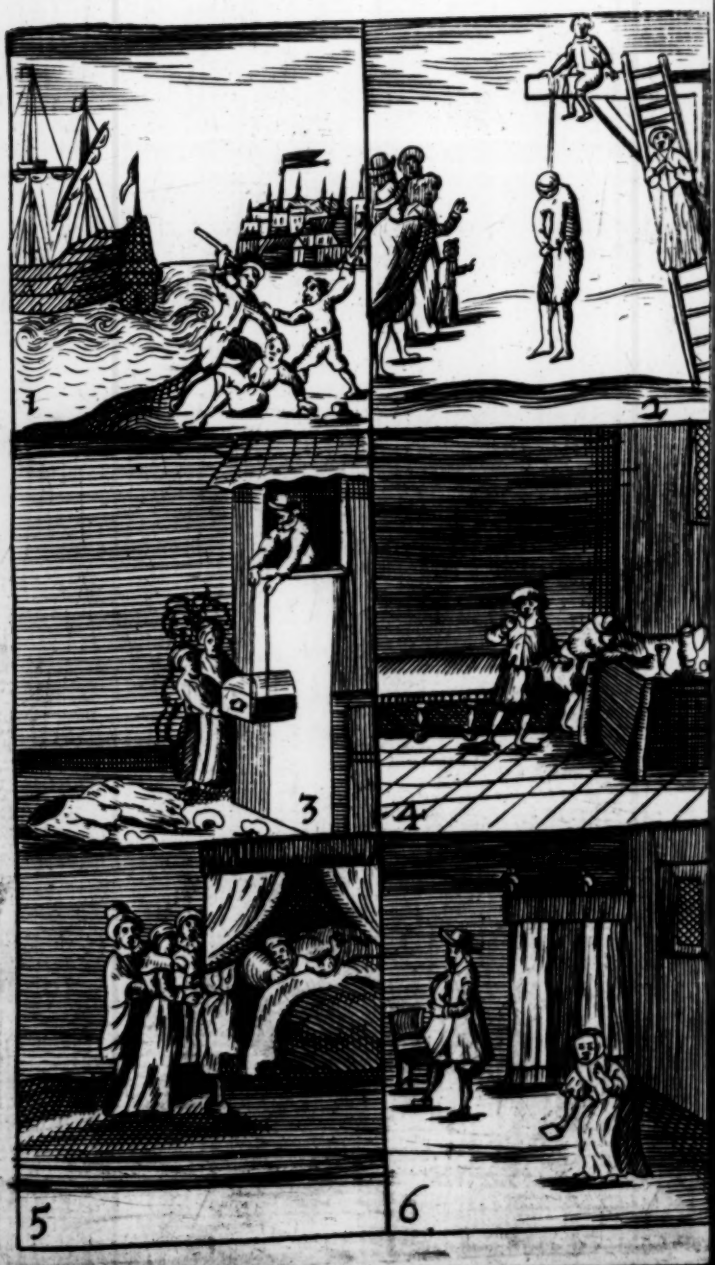
With the Illuſtration of Pictures to every Chapter.

LONDON,

Printed for *Francis Kirkman*, and are to be Sold by *William Rands* at the *Crown* in *Duck-lane*. 1680.

C.107.e93.




1
2
3
4
5
6

THE ENGLISH ROGUE:

Continued in the Life of

MERITON LATROON,

AND OTHER

EXTRAVAGANTS.

PART, IV.

CHAP. I.

Sayling from St. Helena, &c. *Landing at* Meſſina, *the Captain,* Latroon, &c. *ſell Ship and Goods; the Seamen falling out and killing one another, they leave them and go for* Palerno; *Thence they travel into the Country, and deſcribe it with its Rarities and Wonders. A comical Adventure in an houſe ſuppoſedly haunted, as they travelled through* Gergento *with their Mulletteer.*

WHhilſt we anchored at the Iſland of *St. Helena* there happened a ſad Accident; whilſt we were recreating and refreſhing our ſelves in the Iſland, one of our men (that brought us aſhore in the Skiff) being an excellent Swimmer, ſtript him-

ſelf, and over the ſide of the Boat he went, he had not been long in the water before ſuch as ſtood on the ſhore to ſee him ſwim, perceived a *Shark* to make towards him; who cryed out, A *Shark*, a *Shark*, haſten to the Boat; which he did with incredible ſpeed, and had laid his hands on her ſide as the *Shark* ſnapt at his Leg, and having it in his mouth turned on his back, and twiſted it off from his knee. The fellow proteſted to me that when this was done, he felt no pain any where but under his Arm pits; the fellow was dreſt and perfectly cur'd; afterwards this very *Shark* was taken by one of our men, fiſhing for him with a great piece of Raw-Beef, and when his belly was ripp'd open, the Leg was found whole therein. From St *Helena*, having taken in freſh water, and gotten in ſome other refreſhment that the Iſland afforded, we ſet ſail with a freſh breeze and good weather.

Our Captain getting himſelf into the great Cabbin, gave the word for me, I coming to him, now, ſaid he, let you and I have a little private diſcourſe together, to the intent that we may perfect with ſafety what we have enterpriz'd with hazard. You know my full intent as to the diſpoſing of the Ship and Goods to my own uſe and benefit, excepting only what is yours, and the reſt of our Comrades: What your old friend in Breeches hath with great hazard ventur'd for, let her enjoy it freely ſince ſhe hath deſerved it, and that you may ſee the frankneſs of my Spirit, go, get our friends together that I may inform them, that though I play the Rogue with others, yet I will be juſt to them; your *Newgate* Birds will have ſuch as wrong their own fraternity

nity to be ſtigmatiz'd, and branded with a name of Infamy indelible.

I quickly got them together, and having provided for us what Meat and Liquors (the beſt) he had aboard, he then told us that we were all heartily welcome, and that he was now, more than ever our friend, and having taken a good luſty draught of what he had before him, ſeeing it go round; friends and fellow-Travellers, ſaid he, from my Childhood I have had wondrous and various viciſſitudes of Fortune, in ſo much that though the relation of ſeveral of your lives which I have had, ſeems very ſtrange and eminently remarkable to me, yet when you ſhall hear me giving you an account of the tranſactions of my life, which I ſhall trouble you with very ſpeedily, you will look upon them as incredible as *Mounſieur* St. *Serfs* Voyage into the Moon, or the Travels of Sir *John Mandivle*; In all the various windings and turnings of my life, I never was ſettled long in one Condition. It is true, from very low and mean beginnings I have got to the heigh t of conſiderable employments from a Pariſh Child, I was for my Rogueries condemned to be tranſported, by ſubtle deportment and inſinuating behaviour I changed my Doom, and was made Cabbin-boy, from thence I did gradually riſe paſſing through every Office that doth belong to a Ship till I was couſtituted a Captain, ſeveral Voyages I have made to moſt parts of the known World, and have gotten great ſums of money, but no ſooner did I call it my own, but it vaniſhed my ſhipwrack, or I was taken Priſoner and loſt it that way. I am now in my declenſion, and having a fairer opportunity than ever I yet had, or

ever thought to have to enrich my ſelf, and ſit down quietly in ſome remote Corner of the World, I am reſolved to lay hold on it. And now coming near the Coaſt of *Europe* I ſhall tell you my reſolution, that I intend to make my ſelf a voluntary Exile to my own Countrey. In order thereunto I ſhall ſhape my courſe for the *Streights*, which will harbor my deſign in diſpoſing of my goods, neither will it be prejudicial to you to accompany me thither, ſince from thence you may diſpoſe your ſelves to the beſt and moſt flouriſhing Countries of the World.

Here he pauſed a while to hear our opinion, which we acquainted him with unanimouſly, that we were very joyful to continue longer in his company, and that we would ſee him anchored in his deſigned Port, or run what ever fortune ſhould befal him; having aſſured him this, he continued his diſcourſe: Since I know your minds, and am, and ſhall be obliged to you for your ſocieties, I ſhall endeavour to requite your kindneſſes: and that my words may not ſeem airy pretences without performances, I ſhall make this Propoſition which if granted, you ſhall know how I have ſtudied a way to gratifie you. It is this, Maſter *Latroon*, the Scrivener there, and Drugſter, ſhall give each of them one hundred pounds a piece to Miſtreſs *Dorothy*, and that I may not exempt my ſelf from helping her forward into the World, I will give the like ſum with this Box of rough Diamonds, which I know is worth as much more; we all conſented: next, ſaid he, every man according to his ſtock of money expended in the procuration of what Commodities we have aboard upon the Sale thereof ſhall receive it again, and his profit thereof according to

pro-

proportion, with an equal dividend of what Goods was taken upon credit. You ſhall ſee me ſo juſt to you, that I will ſomewhat injure my ſelf by taking no fraught from you, but inſtead thereof the principal Officers ſhall ſhare with us, and the private Seamen ſhall have double pay out of the ſame *Goods* which we took upon truſt.

Upon this we all agreed, and the noiſe of this Agreement running through the Ship, the niceſt of them all from the higheſt to the loweſt liked ſo well the Knaviſh-generoſity of our Captain, that they all caper'd for joy, and having brought out what Brandy they had on the Decks, drinking the Captains Health, proteſting to ſerve him with their lives, they received Commands to ſtand away for *Sicilia*, where in a little time we ſafely came to an Anchor.

Arriving at *Sicilia* an Iſland of the Mediterranean-Sea, ſeated betwixt *Italy* and *Africk*, we made choice of *Meſſina*, a City as it is the moſt illuſtrious one, in that all-fruitful and ever-flouriſhing Iſland, ſo it is for all manner of forreign Commerce as much crowded with the great Conflux of ſtrangers as moſt places in *Europe*; here we landed, and ſoon found it the onely place of the world that would beſt fit our purpoſe: The Joy that poſſeſs'd ſuch eſpecially that had never been there before, undoubtedly would have over-ſwell'd its Banks and become boundleſs, had not the prudent foreſight of ſome of us hindred its increaſe by informing there were ſome black threatning Clouds of danger ſtill hung over our heads, and that we could not be ſafe till we had ſetled our affairs by the ſale of our Ship and Goods, then if they would ride poſt to their pleaſures none ſhould

ſtop them in their Carreer; this ſomething qualified their exultation and rejoycing, and every one officiated in his proper function.

Our Commodities were not only excellently good in their kind, but extraordinary rich and valuable, the knowledge whereof ſoon reaching the ears of the Inhabitants and Merchants of *Meſſina*, they came in Droves to us, becauſe it was troubleſome to deal with ſo many, we reſolv'd to make a quick market of the Continent and things contained, Ship and *Cargo* altogether. This Propoſition better pleas'd thoſe wealthy Citizens, than if we had plaid the Hukſters with our Commodities, wherefore two of the moſt wealthy and greateſt account amongſt them bought all, paying us ready money without a penny Credit. After that every man had received his ſhare or dividend proportionably, and according to a general Agreement; we divided our ſelves into parties as Intereſt or Inclination lead us. The Captain, Scrivener, Druggſter, *Jane*, *Doll*, and my ſelf were of one company, the Sea-men with the Under-officers of the ſhip divided themſelves into ſeveral Gangs or Squadrons, who having more money now than their Great-grand-fathers ever told in their lives, fell into ſuch an exceſs of Debaucherv, that the Citzens thought that Hell had plotted a Conſpiracy to diſturb their quiet, and theſe were the Emiſſiaries who ſhould put it in execution.

Getting drunk they frequently quarrell'd about their *Sicilian* wenches, and indeed to give them their due they ſeem by the out-ſide to be worth the going to Logger-heads for, ſometimes they fell together by the ears, in that one that deſerved not to have a quar-

ter

ter ſo much as himſelf, yet had full as much; and now having ſtore of money they regarded their gentility, in that manner that they ſtood upon every punctilio to defend it from the calumnies and aſperſions of ſuch who had but a little before been *hail fellow, well met*: ſo that now the leaſt ſeeming affront would not go down with them, unleſs it were ſteept in the blood that dropt from Noſe of the Affronter, when there was a ceſſation of Arms among themſelves, then would they ramble about the ſtreets like mad men, abuſing whomever they met, and were well chaſten'd for their pains, ſeveral of them coming ſhort home.

The City began now to mutter, and verily believed them to be a parcel of Rogues that had ſold what was none of their own, and probably to the ruin of many an honeſt man; and was therefore reſolved to endure this outrage no longer.

We hearing this, thought our ſelves very unſafe whilſt in *Meſſina*, and therefore concluded to remove thence to *Palermo*, a City in the ſame Iſland of *Sicilia*. By enquiry I found the moſt convenient an cuſtomary way of travelling thither was by *Mules*, which are plentiful for Hire; I bargained for as many as would conveniently carry our company which were ſix, and our money; and ſo with as much privacy as we could we departed *Meſſina*; theſe *Mules* travelled very commodiouſly with us, and carried us over the mountains both with ſpeed and ſecurity; and although it was an hundred and eighty miles from the City we left behind us, to *Palermo*, yet we got thither in leſs then four days.

In this famous City of *Palermo* (the faireſt of all others

others of *Sicily*, and at preſent the Metropolis and Regal Seat) we ſtayed ſome conſiderable time, and laying a ſide for a while our ſhifting and cheating, *&c.* having enough, that we might employ our wits and inventions in nothing but contriving variety of Recreations, and Pleaſures, which were the novel, we cared not at what exceſſive rate we purchas'd them.

The Captain and my ſelf being more than half glutted with City delights reſolved, for ſome few days to travel into the Countrey, and ſince it was ſo famouſly noted, we would not leave it till we had ſeen thoſe Excellencies and Rarities wherewith it injoyes Fames Trumpet through the whole Univerſe. In order thereunto taking our leave of our Friends, and promiſing to return within five or ſix days, we proceeded in our progreſs. In our ſhort Itenerary we ſaw many brave Towns, and wonderful Places, which told, would exceed belief, as Mount *Ætna*, and *Mongibello*, *Strombellow*, *&c.* which though it belcheth inexpreſſible and continual fire out of its bowels, yet hath its head notwithſtanding (on that part where the fire iſſues) covered with deep Snow till the midſt of Summer. In *Meunenino* is the lake *Naſtia*, where in three Eddies you may perfectly perceive boyling water, which gurgles up with an intolerable ſtink, and ſometimes you may ſee it ſpew up flames of fire. It hath likewiſe in ſundry other places divers other fountains of admirable nature and quality.

In ſome Caves and Grots we were ſhown by the people, we ſaw the vaſtly big and immenſe bodies of men in former time, which were accounted Monſters of Men or Gyants, or to verifie the matter, they believe

believe themſelves that a long time ſince, the *Cyclops* inhabited their Iſland. We found the People generally acute, and quick-witted, very facetious, and of a jolly temper, which ſuited well with the Nature of the Countrey. For to be brief, this Iſland is not inferiour to any other, either for its fatneſs or abundance; exceeding *Italy* in the excellency of their Grain, Saffron, Honey, Beaſts-skins, and other things either for Profit or pleaſure, in ſo much that as it was call'd by *Tully* the Granary of the world, ſo *Homer* called it the Iſland of the Sun, and would have us believe all things grew there ſpontaneouſly of their own accord; the ſalubrity of the air is very excellent, as well as the abundance of terrene ſuſtenance, and plenty of all things neceſſary for mans uſe, and indeed may be counted the beſt, which it either affords naturally, or produceth by man's ingenuity.

Wild-oats grow there, without ſowing, and the Vines without planting; their Wines are moſt delicate, their fruit of all ſorts grow with great plenty and goodneſs; to be ſhort, there is nothing wanting which may not only delight the eye, but pleaſe the moſt critical Palat with whatever may be accounted guſtful.

Being almoſt tired with variety of objects abroad, and being not willing to truſt our Comrads at home too much, fearing the temptation of a too long abſence, we concluded to return, which I perceived was no ſmall trouble to our *Mulletteer*, whom we hired to ſhew us the Countrey, and the rather, becauſe he could indifferently ſpeak good *Engliſh*, intelligible at leaſt, for this Rogue had not been accuſtomed to fare as we made him do, and therefore he had been well

well content to have travelled through the whole Univerſe at that Rate. Being homewards bound, and the day being far ſpent, we came to a place called *Gergento*, near which is the Territory of *Matharuca*, a ſmall Town, in which there were but few houſes; however we rode up to the beſt of them, and commanded our Guide to ask whether we might have entertainment there that night: The Maſter of the houſe took it as a great affront that his houſe ſhould be accounted an Inn, and anſwerred him ſnappiſhly that he might look his maſters lodging where it was made a profeſſion to accommodate Paſſengers on the road: he asked him, where ſuch accommodation might be had? to which the other replyed, he knew none nearer than three Leagues.

Our Gnide told us what he ſaid, which nettel'd me to ſome purpoſe; inſomuch that I could not but expreſs ſome paſſion, and a great deal of trouble that we ſhould be expoſed to the travelling ſo far, and ſo late; which the Gentleman taking notice of, ſeeing by my Garb I muſt be a Gentleman, though a ſtranger, and therefore could not be ignorant of the *Latine* tongue ſo ornamental and univerſally uſeful, addreſt himſelf very civilly to me, and deſired me (in *Latine*) that I would take no exception at whatever had paſs'd, that though his houſe was no Inn, yet he ſhould be very glad to accommodate any Gentleman with a Lodging, eſpecially in ſuch an extremity, had he not been that very day deprived of the means by the arrival of ſome friends of his from *Syracuſa*, which had filled his houſe, excepting only one Room, which if I would not think with my friend too mean and unworthy for our reception, he ſhould glad-

gladly ſpare it, and with it, what the houſe afforded. I tendered him in the behalf of my ſelf and the Captain a thouſand thanks, in the ſame tongue, though not in ſo quaint a dialect, being ſomewhat deficient in the propriety and Ideom of that noble Language, aſſuring him we ſhould not be ſo forgetful as to prove ingrateful for this favour he was pleaſed to conſer upon us; upon this we diſmounted, and giving our Mules to our Guide we were conducted into a very handſome Rome by this *Seignior de Domo*, and careſſed by him and his newly arrived friends as if we had been of their antient acquaintance. I could hardly forbear laughing outright to ſee what a confuſion the Captain was in, when they ſpake to him, for they ſpake to him in their own tongue, which is a rough *Italian* without any ſweetneſs, which they perceiving he underſtood not, they ſpake *Lotine*, and then *Spaniſh*, of all which he underſtood not ſo much as to make ſenſe, and therefore anſwered them in *French*, which none of them underſtood, ſo that when he ſaw the diſtorting of his eyes and mouth, which was ſhaped in a hundred forms (partly for confuſion, and partly for vexation) would not interpret his meaning, he applied himſelf to his fingers, telling his ſtory after ſuch an antick manner, that as I langht, the Company had much ado to forbear bearing me company: Seeing him grow almoſt angry, I thought it high time to make an Apology for him, pretending that what I ſaid, was what he would have ſaid, but that his language was *non intelligent* in the Company.

Supper, by that time we had chatted a little longer (*modo Italiano*) was ſerved to the Table, and with

with ſome Ceremony ſeated our ſelves, without his Wife or Daughters, although he hath both, and as I afterwards found, had ſuch angelical countenances, that in ſtead of obſcuring or abſconding ſo great a luſtre, he might have gloried in communicating their external perfections to our ſight, which were illuſtrated by the adjuncts of ſo many tranſcendent concurrences of beautiful *Ideas*.

We did not *German*-like after this Evenings Repaſt, preſently fall to drinking as if we had lately ſwallowed the Offals of half a dozen ſlaughter-houſes, and now were pouring down liquor in abundance to ſweeten the Funnel or cleanſe the Common-ſhore that the filth had contaminated within us; but inſtead thereof we entred into very pleaſant and agreeable diſcourſe, every one having the liberty of inlarging it as he thought fit without interruption.

Among a great variety of ſeveral Subjects, that of Phantaſms and Aparitions fell in our way, one affirming he believ'd that though Spirits might appear formerly, yet it would not enter into his belief that now there was any ſuch thing: Nay, ſaid another, methinks you may be eaſily convinc'd of the contrary by thoſe Legions of ſtories to this purpoſe, ſo that I ſhould think there ſhould be ſome Fire whence all this Smoak comes. Said the Maſter of the houſe, if you will not believe what is contained in ſo many Volumes written by the Pens of ſo many learned and pious Divines, believe yet the reports of ſuch as now are living, have ſeen Phantaſms in ſeveral ſhapes, and have heard their terrifying noiſe, amongſt whom I am one, and I ſhall tell you to my great trouble that this very houſe of mine is to this day, from a conſiderable

derable time ſince, afflicted with horrible Apparitions. Gentlemen, ſaid he, fear not, he confines himſelf to one Room only, and ſo, that he that lyeth in the next, ſhall be ſo far from being diſturbed, that he ſhall neither ſee nor hear any thing: and this is the Room, ſpeaking to us, which this diſturbed Fiend makes his Rendezvouz, and for no other reaſon I refuſed you Lodging, all my other Rooms being prepoſſeſs'd by thoſe Gentlemen my *Amigo's*. This ſhall not daunt us, ſaid I, but we will lie there this night that we may reſolve to morrow whatis now much doubted.

Bidding them good night, ſeveral offer'd themſelves to accompany us till morn, but we refuſ'd it, judging their proffer a Complement by the pallid hue of their countenances. It was not long after our departure e're every one in the whole houſe betook themſelves to their reſpective Chambers there to take their reſt. My ſtout Captain (as I have ſufficiently made appear) had no mind to take any, either for fear he ſhould be caught napping by the Fiend, or elſe ſeeing him by flight, eſcape him; I was partly of his mind too, rather deſiring to contend with a thouſand men than one Devil. The Captain and my ſelf ſate up in our Room till we judg'd it to be about midnight, and then ſeeing nothing (our eyes being almoſt ſhut by ſitting up ſo long) we went to bed, and quickly fell aſleep.

Our *Mulletteer* (either having not fill'd his belly at Supper, on the remembrance of ſuch excellent food which he had ſeen not letting him ſleep till he had the other bout with it, got up where he lay, and having obſerved where the Servants had placed on a ſhelf a large

large Miſh of moſt incomparable ſood in a ſmall Cloſet accompanied with ſeveral flasks of *Florrence*-wine, he ſoſtly crope down the ſtairs, and got to this Room where the delights of his heart ſtood, but endeavouring to take down the diſh (which proving too heavy for him to manage) ſlipt out of his hands, and in its fall broke down a ſmall ſhelf that had a great many Pewter-plates thereon, with other rattling ſtuff, all which together made a fearful noiſe, and ſo great that not a Perſon in the houſe but what awak'd thereat; but ſuch was there Courage that not one of them would ſtir, for they now really concluded the Spirit was come, as for my own part my Captain and ſelf were ſo terrified and affrighted at this hideous noiſe that we now believed what reports we heard, and therefore were reſolved to lye a bed, and ſweat our ſelves to death, rather than riſe in that reaking condition and endanger our lives by catching cold, as the ſweat dropt from us, ſo we trembled that the bed ſhook, I am ſure it was not with cold.

Whilſt we were in this fearful Agony, the Rogue our *Mulletteer*, who liſtning what effects this clutting Alarm would produce, and hearing no perſon ſtirring; concluded we were all dead aſleep through the whole houſe, fell on manfully on the Cheer that was before him, getting out ſome Bottles of Wine, interloyning every bit with a large ſoop of the bottle, having now ſtuft his gut and fill'd his head with the fumes of Wine, which he drank at no aim, he gets to the ſtairs, but the covetous and provident Raſcal fearing he ſhould be dry before morning, ſteps back and takes with him a flask of that wine he had already ſo freely drank of, and mounts the ſtairs ſoftly

ly with it in his hand, advancing to the top of the ſtairs, directly againſt which our Chamber-door ſtood, he ſtumbled upon the head of the ſtairs, and endeavouring to ſave himſelf and the Bottle, he raiſed that hand aloft, wherein it was, and falling, not being able to recover himſelf, daſht the Bottle againſt our door with ſo much fury, that I do not think there was a piece of the glaſs in the flask the breadth of a ſhilling, the ſuddain ſurprize of this diſmal and horrd thump made the Captain ſtart with ſuch a leap that he fell out of the bed, bearing the Bed ſtaff with him which ſo rattled in his fall, that this added very much to the horrour that had invaded all our ſpirits. This noiſe in our Chamber confirmed the juſtneſs of their fears throughout the houſe, only that of our Mulletters was of a different nature; for he believing his Maſters (as he call'd us) were getting up to find what was the matter, endeavoured to get down the ſaid way he got up, but groaping with his hands, met with the ſhattered flask on the top of the ſtairs, which tumbling down to the bottom, the noiſe of the fractur'd glaſs perfectly reſembled the gingling of Chains.

It is impoſſible for me to characterize their fear and fright, both which together had ſo totally routed what courage they had within them, that a Corporal Pygmie with two files of revolted Cranes wou'd at that time have taken them all Priſoners. Our *Mulletteer* fearing by this ſecond alarm that he ſhould now infallibly wake ſome of the houſe; who finding him in that condition would undoubtedly ſuſpect him of ſome vilanous Deſign, therefore thought it his ſafeſt way to march down again, and lay his Car-

kaſs any where till it was day. Being half way down the ſtairs, he could hear the voice of one crying, *Il Diabolo*, *Il Diabolo*, The Devil, the Devil, repeating it often, which ſo affrighted him that he thought to have returned back, but hearing the noiſe go from him, with the trampling of feet on the ſtones as in flight, he boldly purſued them, and cryed out to them, *Queſto Diabolo*, what Devil, and where, I am none, but I will ſee what Devil you are. Theſe were three Rogues which had a long time deſign'd to rob this houſe, not living far off it; who were well acquainted with this houſe, and had heard that it was viſited by Phantaſms; now as they were about to mount the ſtairs they met with the flask, and broken glaſs in it, which frighted them away from that enterprize as effectually, as if the Devil with the gingling his Chains had come to meet them.

Our *Mulletteer* had not been ſo long a Rogue, condemned twice to be a Gally ſlave, and very narrowly eſcap'd from being broken on the wheel, but that he quickly ſmelt the plot of theſe three Night-walkers, that they were only bent on miſchief, ſo taking advantage of the fright their guilty Conſciences put them in, he ſeized one of their Swords, which he exerciſed ſo well that they found they had another ſort of ſpirit to deal with, than what they had fled from; it being a *Devil incarnate*; diſarming the Thieves he raiſed the houſe, but with much ado, and had not done it, had he not ſhown their light in their Dark-lanthorn, none yet daring to be ſo bold as to come down in the dark to light a Candle; and now they began to creep out of their Chambers with as much caution, as if their way had been planted with

Spaniſh-

Spaniſh-needles. The Captain and my ſelf waited when ſome others would ſtir firſt, and others exſpected the like from us, but at length caſting off this enſlaving Cowardiſe, we went down the ſtairs, meeting with the Gentleman of the houſe, accompanied with ſome of his laſt nights Gueſts, and ſo deſcended into the Court-yard together, where we found our *Mulletteer* with Swords enough to furniſh us all, his Captives lying at his feet not daring to ſtir; theſe, ſaid he, are the Devils that haunt this houſe, but I will lay them for you, I will conjure them far enough off if you will but ſay the word; leading them into the Hall, we met with one of the Menials of the houſe whoſe haſte had made him (after an hours conſideration what was beſt to be done) to leave his Doublet behind him, yet forgot not his Sword.

Upon his firſt Examination they confeſt what they intended to do, that there was four more in their company who had made their eſcape, but were ignorant of what they carryed with them. Their own confeſſion was a ſufficient conviction, and ſo they were ſecured for the preſent, by tying Neck and Heels together.

The old Gentleman miſſing ſome of his friends, began to condemn them for their ſluggiſhneſs, and ſupinity; come, ſaid he, let us take them napping and in that poſture upbraid them with their ſloath: We hereupon followed him up ſtairs, and entring their Chambers found nought but the furniture therein; without ſpeaking one word, away he ran haſtily to his Daughters Chamber, but found that as empty of Lodgers as the reſt; and a Cabinet which he committed to her cuſtody gone, which was worth a very va-

luable ſum: at the ſight hereof you might have blown the old Gentleman down, had not paſſion animated him and kept him up from ſinking, which he diſcharg'd ſo violently on thoſe that were left behind, which were the aged Kindred of the young man that had ſtoln this fair Maid away, that as much as ever they could do to bear the ſhock, but at laſt unanimouſly proteſting they were innocent and ignorant of what was done, and promiſing they would uſe their utmoſt aſſiſtance and endeavour in the ſpeedy reſtitution of his Daughter inviolated, he believ'd them guiltleſs, and begg'd them to be as good as their word.

And now conſulting what he ſhould do with his Priſoners, he was adviſed to ſend his man for an Officer, and ſecure them in a place not far diſtant, erected for the confinement of Felons, Murderers, *&c.* as he was going out he had forgot his Doublet for haſte, although he had his Sword on, wherefore he was call'd back, who being ordered to fetch it firſt, was prevented by the Maids coming full butt as he was going in the ſearch thereof, he would have paſs'd her, had I not perceived ſhe had not a thing like a Waſtecoat on, and therefore calling to him, ſaid, Save your ſelf the labour, here is what you are going to ſeek for; coming back he found his Doublet on the maids back, I imagining whence this Miſtake did ariſe, to make our ſorrowful Landlord a little ſport, Sir, ſaid I, Do you not ſee your Maid hath got your mans Doublet already, and will no doubt, get his Breeches too if you do not prevent it; and then looking to his leggs and ſeeing what a traiterous miſtake he had committed; Do you Sir, ſaid I, buy

buy your mans Stockings of two different colours, the one is blue, you ſee, the other grey; hereupon the maids Stockings were examined and found to be on the one ſide gray, the other ſide true blue. This made the Company all laugh, neither could the old Gentleman forbear to ſmile, but having other buſineſs to think on, commanded them to reſtore to each other what they had borrowed, and he would take a time to examine the cauſe thereof, plain enough from what was ſeen to outward appearance.

Theſe Rogues being committed to a publick Goal, he could not be quiet but he muſt go into his Daughters Chamber again, and upon a review thereof found a Letter directed to him, to this purpoſe:

Sir,

YOU may juſtly blame me for leaving your Houſe without your conſent or privity, but when you ſhall conſider it was to avoid my eternal ruine, I hope the Sentence and Puniſhment which my diſobedience doth deſerve may prove more favourably merciful; hitherto you have been the ſole Monarch of both mind and body, but play not the Tyrant by making my will your eternal Slave. Sir, Youth cannot look through thoſe Spectacles which are uſeful to Age, nor can my inclination ſuit with your choice. I am now with him whom I love more than my ſelf, nor can I eſteem of that Gentleman of Catania *whom you have ſelected for me, otherwiſe than the deſigned Murderer of my quiet. If you will ſequeſter me from my Choice, I will ſeclude my ſelf from all in a Monaſtery.*

Having read theſe lines he raved out-right, ſome-

times condemning his rigid deſtiny, then exclaiming againſt the perfidiouſneſs of ſuch who under the pretence of friendſhip ſhould be his undoers; But having tired himſelf with theſe fruitleſs complaints, he ſoberly ask'd our advice what he ſhould do in this intricacy. We all adviſed him to follow them cloſe at heels with all imaginable expedition, the Captain and my ſelf promiſing him our Company in the ſearch; the next day mounted we rode the way wherein we gueſt the Gentlemen were gone with the young Gentlewoman, and having rid about ten miles from *Gergento*, the place from whence we came, we overtook two fellows who gave us cauſe to ſuſpect them by their looks and habits, whilſt I was acquainting the old Gentleman with my thoughts of them, they liking not our whiſpering betook themſelves to their heels, which ſo increos'd our jealouſie, that with Whip and Spur I ſoon overtook them, they reſiſted me for a while, but being overpoured by number yielded, ſearching them we found little money, the old Gentleman viewing them ſtrictly, ſaw his own Coat upon one of their backs, and now concluding that theſe were the Rogues that had his Cabinet too, made a very ſtrict reſearch but to no purpoſe, they denying they had ever ſeen ſuch a thing; but this ſerved not their turns, and although we ſhould hinder our intent in proſecuting a better diſcovery, yet we thought it very requiſite to return and ſecure them with the reſt of their fellows.

Coming home to his own houſe, he underſtood that the maid which particularly had waited a long time on his Daughter was ſuddenly gone, giving to none an account why or wherefore, but ſhe was watch'd

watch'd to go ſuch a way: We were now all verily perſwaded ſhe was gone in queſt of her Miſtreſs, and that by tracking her, we ſhould know where ſhe was. The advife was well reſented and ſpeedily proſecuted, with ſuch good ſucceſs, as in leſs than a days time we found this Gillian and her companion footing it in great haſte towards *Catania*, but we ſoon ſtopt their Journey, and diſcovered, they had got what the poor Gentlewoman was accuſed of, ſhe had given it to her Friend to carry, but they were both like to bear the weight of the burthen. Examining her, ſhe confeſt when ſhe ſaw her Miſtreſs was gone from her Father, and imagining ſhe would be ſuſpected to carry the Cabinet with her, (which would ſupport her, ſhould her Father frown for ever) ſhe took that opportunity to enrich her ſelf, and that Friend with her.

It was well this timely diſcovery was made for the five Rogues in Goal, it was as good as a Pardon after condemnation paſt, and now the old Gentleman ſeeing he had loſt nothing, and that his Daughter with her diſobedience was unjuſtly ſuſpected a thief, he franckly proteſted before us all, that he would never put a reſtriction on his Daughters choice, but would freely give his conſent to whom ſhe thought ſo worthy as to be her Husband; This Proteſtation was immediately diſpatch'd away, by one that knew where our Lovers were, which happy News recall'd them home to their mutual ſatisfactions, and that the ſufferings of her Maid and Friend might not eclipſe the Joy and Gladneſs which attended their Hymenial Rites, ſhe begg'd her Father to forgive them all, who to gratifie their deſires proſecuted none of

thoſe notorious Offenders; and ſo we ſhall leave this joyful Couple to ſpin out the Thread of their delight equally to that of their lives education.

Were ever men ſo ſcar'd, did ever fright
So ſeize weak Mortals in the dead of night?
Could a bare noiſe affright when nought appear'd?
And being afraid we knew not what we fear'd:
One hid his head all underneath the cloaths,
Leſt that the Fiend ſhould take him by the Noſe:
Dumb was he too, for not a word did paſs,
Leſt that ſhould tell him where about he was.
My Friend, the Captain, whom I will not wrong,
Did ne're before to me ſmell half ſo ſtrong:
My panting heart (I almoſt ſtew'd to death)
Did beat ſo faſt I could not draw my breath.
Now comes the worſt, the noiſe approach'd more near,
All things comb in'd for to increaſe our fear.
Mounting the ſtairs Old Nick *was drunk I think,*
To break his Bottle, and to ſpill his drink:
The ratling Flask tumbling the ſtairs amain,
Did make us think the Devil ſhook his Chain.
But now th' appearance of the Morning-light,
Gave us new life, and put our fears to flight:
For now we found, for all the peoples talk,
The Sp'rit was quiet, but the Thieves did walk.
This houſe theſe haunted which were worſer Evils,
Than Fiends or Goblings, Damn'd-incarnate-Devils.
This Apparition plainly did diſcover,
That this ſame night the Maid lay with her Lover.
For the Stockings and the Doublet did diſcloſe,
The match they made had thus miſmatch'd their Cloths.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

They are ſhip'd from Palerno *to* Naples, *by the way* *Miſtreſs* Dorothy *continues the ſtory of her Hoſteſs who was hanged with her Husband for a Murder, the like was never heard of, her notorious confeſſion at the Gallows of all her former Villanies:* La-troons *reflections on it.* *Miſtreſs* Dorothy *and her Companion the Souldier, return for* London.

OUR *Mulletteer* was very well rewarded by our Entertainer, for the prevention of ſo much miſchief, which had undoubtedly befel the Gentleman, had not this fellow gone down at that unſeaſonable time to ſtuff his inſatiate guts. And now taking our leaves (the Gentleman and his friends being very unwilling and ſorrowful to part with our Companies) away we came ſhaping our courſe for *Palermo*, where being arriv'd and finding out thoſe Friends we had left too long, infinite was our ſatisfaction of meeting thus together again, but I thought my *Jinny* would have been tranſported with joy when ſhe ſaw me, but recovering her ſelf, ſhe check'd me ſeverely for ſtaying ſo long from her beyond my promiſe. Our careſſes were accompanied with what choice Viands and Wine the City could produce.

Having now pleaſed our ſight with the curioſities of this place, we concluded upon a remove; and the next place pitcht on was *Naples*, and to the intent we might convey our moneys with greater ſafety thither, we took up Bills at *Palermo* for 5000 pounds, drawn upon a Merchant of *Naples*, payable

able ten days after ſight. Having ſhipp'd our ſelves, with all conveniences, that our Voyage might not ſeem tedious, I deſired Miſtreſs *Dorothy* to divert the Company with the continuation of her Story. Ah Maſter *Latroon!* (ſaid ſhe) your Requeſt renews my grief, by putting me in mind of the loſs of my dear Companion *Mall*, however I ſhall endeavour to ſatisfie your deſire, and having given a ſummary account to the Captain and the reſt, which had not heard any thing of her former relation, of what was before diſcovered, ſhe commenc'd her following diſcourſe where ſhe before left off, *viz.* her coming acquainted with the Soldier, and then ſhe thus proceeded.

Being rid of my great Belly, and having now gotten me a good round ſum of money, I took my pleaſure with as much freedom as my unlimited deſires could prompt me to, I was frequently at the old womans the Hoſteſs, (*alias* my Procureſs) where I found conveniences for all my ſecret, crafty, and pleaſant Deſigns, and indeed to give her her due, ſhe was no Back-friend to me, this was the place which I made my general Rendezvouz; here I did uſe to meet with my Friends, and here I did converſe with my Soldier of Fortune (as I have already told you) before I make any further progreſs, give me leave to rehearſe a Copy of Verſes (which I got by heart) of his own compoſition, which he made upon the cunning trick he found in conjuring for food for his hungry Landlord and his own half famiſht worſhip, which were theſe:

Hun-

HUnger's a Whetſtone that ſo ſharpens Wit,
It cuts away for ſome to feed by it.
For ſtomacks cramm'd with Lethargies do blind
The active wit, and hebetates the mind.
The Grammer-ſchool when it hath ſpawn'd the Fry
either to Oxford *or to* Cambridge *bye:*
Where leſt they ſhould by too much food grow dull
They ſcare in ſeven years have their belly full.
That Barreſters at Bar may louder bawl,
See the ſhort Commons that art in the Hall.
'Tis plenty ruſts our Valour, when we need,
Rather then ſtarve, we there can bravely bleed:
For food we fight, for which we Centry ſtand,
Want makes our wit as active as our hand.
Thus did my wit ſhew to my wants a way
To fill its belly, and increaſe my pay.
Hence I may ſay that I do live by wit,
For I've got money, and a Wench with it.
Grammercy Wit, help and aſſiſt me ſtill,
He ne're can want that hath but Wit at will.

This Souldier was a Gentleman of a good houſe, though fallen to decay, whoſe education might have renderd him capable of conſiderable employments, had not his Heroick inclination to the Wars taken his thoughts clearly off from every thing elſe. I appointed a day for this man of war, to attend me ſome few miles into the Countrey, having got leave of his Captain we went together, in the mean time my Hoſteſs was ſpinning of Hemp, and by return had finiſht a Rope for her ſelf and Husband: and thus it was,

A ſingle Gentleman came as a Traveller to lodge in her Inn, having ſet up his Horſe, and his Portman-

tua

tua carried to his Chamber, he knocks for his Landlady, who coming up to him he acquaints her that he thought he ſhould make a ſtay for two or three days, and therefore delivers into her hands a bag of one hundred pounds, deſiring her to lay it up ſafe for him, ſhe took the Bag and promiſed to keep it ſafe, and ſo ſhe did from him: The Devil was one of her Privy Councel who adviſed her to perſwade her Husband to murder the Gentleman for his money, which thus they cunningly effected as they thought, but he that did ſet them at work will pay them their wages.

At midnight ſhe and her Husband entred the Gentlemans Chamber through a private door which was hid behind the hangings, a Sally-port for a thouſand Rogueries they committed; mine Hoſt with a Pillow he had brought with him, and the aſſiſtance of his wife, ſmothered the Gentleman as he lay in his bed, having ſo done, and putting on his Cloaths, they laid him down into the Stable, and there with a Rope ty'd to a beam, they hung him up, and ſo went to Bed; In the morning the Hoſtler going into the Stable found a Gentleman there hanging, upon ſight whereof he ran into the houſe with an Out-cry, which quickly reacht the ears of the Neighbourhood, ſo that in an inſtant the houſe was fill'd with people, every one giving his Verdict as his imagination prompted him; the general Vogue was that for ſome diſcontent he had thus deſperately made away with himſelf. This old Beldam had the impudence to come into the Throng of the people, and there declare her Hypocritical ſorrow for the death of her Gueſt, proteſting that ſhe would have given an hundred pounds with all her heart, that no ſuch thing had hapned in her

her houſe. I took notice, ſaid the Hoſt, of his extraordinary melancholy laſt night, and reproving him for his unſociableneſs, he clapt his hand upon his breaſt, and with erected eyes to heaven, he groaned ſo loud and long that I thought it would have been his laſt. This prodigious lye would have wrought wonderfully upon the belief of the People, being a ſtrong Circumſtance of his deſpair or great diſcontent, had not this unlucky boy which I told you of before, cryed out, true good people, I heard him groan too, but it was when my Maſter and Miſtreſs were hanging him up in the Stable, what they had been doing with him before I know not, but I ſaw them as I lay under the manger bring in his body, which ſeem'd to me as dead, and had they ſeen me, I believe I had not been now living; my Miſtreſs had the chiefeſt hand in this work as I judge, for ſhe got up into the Rack, and ſtradling the beam tyed the Rope, then did my Maſter raiſe the body in his Arms for her to put the nooſe about his neck; this is a truth ſaid he, for which I will rather dy than deny.

His Maſter hearing this, and being conſcious to himſelf that this was no ly which the boy ſaid, betook himſelf to his heels, whilſt his wife with a brazen countenance was juſtifying her innocence. The people ſeeing the flight of one, and the matchleſs impudence of the other, concluded them guilty; and laying hands on her firſt, and hold of him after, they ſecured them with the boy till the Conſtable was fetched, who came immediately and carried them before a Juſtice, where being examined they ſtood out ſtiffly in their own vindication, maugre the boys peremptory and undaunted accuſation; In fine their guilty conſcien-

ces

ces would not let them longer perſiſt in their juſtification, but confeſt the Fact that it was an hundred pounds which was committed to their charge by the Gentleman, that firſt tempted them to ſmother him, the Devil helping them to way they thought undiſcoverable. They were committed to a Goal, where they lay till Aſſizes; at which time they were both ſentenced to dye.

Glad was I that it ſhould come into my head to ramble into the Countrey at that nick of time, for my extraordinary familiarity with them might have raiſed a ſuſpition to the endangering of my perſon, beſides the boy which accuſed them had a ſpight againſt me for cauſing him to be ſoundly bang'd ſometimes for ſome Roguiſh trick he ſerved me; one he play'd a little before his Murder was committed, and being baſted for it, I heard him ſay mutteringly, he would find a time to be even, judge you whether he be not, however thus he was an unhappy Roguiſh boy, yet Heaven judged him a fit Inſtrument to diſcover a deed ſo bloody and horribly wicked.

Coming to the place of Execution, I could not ſee in my Hoſts face any conſiderable marks of remorſe or penitency, only the fear of Death had ſcrewed his face into a hundred ugly affrighting formes: She for her part aſcended the Ladder after ſhe had ſeen the death of her Husband, with magnanimity and Courage; having been in Priſon according to report, the greateſt Penitent that ever was known to go thence and ſuffer as a Malefactor, I ſay ſhe ſtanding undauntedly on the Ladder, ſpake to the People after this manner, which I here recount as carrying ſome very remarkable things in it.

The

The Speech of a Notoriously-wicked Woman at her Execution.

CHristian People, the greatneſs of my ſins have cry'd loud to Heaven for Vengeance a long time, but Mercy hath enterceded for the prolongation of my life, to give me a long and fair opportunity for Repentance, but this long forbearance hath but hardned my heart, and made it obdurate; ſo that my black and horrid Sins grew ſo numerous that they awakened divine Juſtice (which hitherto ſeemed to ſleep) to find me out, and bring me to this ſhameful and condign puniſhment. As I am here before you a ſad ſpectacle of miſery, ſo I hope you will beg of God mercy for my poor ſinful ſoul, which from my Cradle to this time hath been polluted not with Crimes of a common Die, but ſuch as were conceived in the Womb of Hell, and Mid-wiv'd by me into this wicked world. What Tragical unpattern'd Miſchiefs they have acted on the Theatre of my native Countrey, my tongue (that curſed Acceſſary in the ruine of ſome Familes) ſhall not conceal from you, ſince I cannot hide them from the knowledge of God Almighty.

When I was ſo young I wanted power to perpetrate Villany, I had ſtrong inclinations to the acting thereof; I was no ſooner wean'd, but I had like to have killed that Mother who gave me life, by pricking her in the naked breaſt with a Bodkin I took out of her Headcloaths, ſhe being then half aſleep, holding me in her Lap, when I arrived to the age of fifteen, the boiling of my blood would not let me reſt till I had ſomewhat qualified its heat in the unlawful reception of a

young

young man, after which sinful act I found my self with Child, to prevent the shame whereof I murdered it, thinking to hide one smaller sin by the greatness of another; the death I am about to suffer should have been the reward of that execrable murder; and now I wish it had been so, for then I had not strangled in the very birth (to abscond my whoredom from my Husband) a Child, the product of my insatiate lust with a Blackmoor, *who afterwards lost his own life in the destructions of my Husbands; neither had I been the cause of the death of two more, had I not been the basely obscene Prostitute to them both.*

But one more remarkable murder then any yet I have related, I must not conceal, the burthen whereof lies like a mountain on my already over-loaded Conscience. Passing one time for a maid, though then a common debauched whore, this Inn-keeper (my fellow-sufferer, and justly so, since he was my Co-partner and Complotter in a thousand Roguish Contrivances) courted me to be his Wife: being informed of his wealth I easily condescended, not regarding his goodness so much as his Goods, and lest he might find what I was on our Nuptial Night; I caused a pure, but poor Virgin whom I hired to lye in my place for that time, but over-sleeping her prefixt time I had appointed for my exchanging places with her, I was forc'd to fire the house, in which confusion she running down to a Well in the yard to get water, I pursued her, and partly to be revenged, and partly to be secured from her future discovery, I tumbled her into the Well, and there she perished: As to the last murther of this Gentleman, I must needs confess my Husband though superlatively wicked, had no inclination thereunto, had I not perswaded him; nay,

upbraid-

upbraided him with puſillanimity and cowardize if he would not be my Coadjutor and Aſſiſtant therein. Now do I wiſh from the bottom of my diſconſolate Soul, I had as many lives as deaths I have occaſioned, to offer up as a Sacrifice which might expiate ſo many crying ſins of murder, as I have committed in my life time, this one is too ſmall a ſatisfaction for the loſs of ſo many. And had I not forfeited it to the Law, yet I ought not to live, conſidering the debauched courſe of life I *ever liv'd, being no more than a rank ſtinking weed, which hindred, nay choak'd the growth of wholeſom herbs and flowers, which otherwiſe might have proved delightful in their fragrancy.*

And now to conclude, if you intend to eſcape this ſhameful puniſhment, and not to be made an example to others, as I *am now to you, ſhun all theſe Vices and Debaucheries which have dragg'd me to this accurſed end, and do not promiſe to your ſelves a better concluſion, if from the beginning thereof you continue the proſecution of vicious and debauched Courſes*; I *was as confident as any heor ſhe here, that hanging was too ignominious a death for ſuch a piece of Gallantry as* I *was, but aſſure your ſelf Heaven hath no reſpect of perſons*; *the Sword of Juſtice ſpares no more the ſhining Gallant and huffing* Bravo, *than the meaneſt ſmutty Tinker*; *And ſo deſiring the Prayers of the Spectators for her, having rendred her private Applications for her eternal concern, ſhe gave the ſign to the Hangman, and ſhe ſo was turned off.*

This Speech of the dying perſon Miſtreſs *Dorothy* rehearſed to me, with ſo much paſſion, giving each word ſo becoming an accent, that I muſt confeſs to

you it wrought wonderfully on me, nay it ſo ſtartled me, that I now began to conſider what would become of me ſince laying aſide murder, (having never imbrewed my hands in blood) I was more notorious in all manner of Vice than the narrowneſs of a female Soul could be capable of imagining much leſs of acting, why ſhould I then humor my ſelf into a fancy of eſcaping, ſince I have ſeen ſo many diſmal Examples of this nature, ſome whereof I have told you, and more I ſhall of my intimates in the proſecution of my Story, who notwithſtanding they have craftily endeavoured to conceal their nefarious actions and projections, yet have been found out by the omnipotent, nay then when they thought him to ſleep over their hainous tranſgreſſions, which puts me in mind of an excellent paſſage of *Juvenal*, though he be a Heathen, in his Satyr 13.

——————*Fatebere tandem*
Nec ſurdum, nec tireſiam, quenquam eſſe Deorum.

Let us confeſs, ſince we at laſt ſhall finde,
None of the Gods are either deaf, or blind.

Craving pardon of Miſtreſs *Dorothy*, I deſired her to proceed, which ſhe did in this manner: Having ſtaid the Execution of my old friend (which was no ſmall trouble to me,) but durſt not be preſent leſt ſhe ſhould diſcover my Rogueries too, ſince ſhe was ſo ingenious to acknowledge her own to the world; I ſay, I ſtaid no longer than to get what things I had ready, and deſiring the Soldier to attend me to *London*, he had ſo much favor from his Office, as to get a ſurlow for eight weeks, and ſo away we march'd:

Imme-

Immediately after our arrival, I took Lodgings in *Covent-Garden*, and having cloath'd him like a Gentleman as he was, we agreed to call each other Couſin, lodging under one and the ſame Roof. His company was very agreeable and complaiſant, which made me take a great delight in his ſociety. He had a good command of his Mother-tongue, expreſſing every thing eloquently and facetely, which his invention furniſhed his mouth withal; when at any time we were alone, he would be continually telling me one Story or other, but chiefly a great many beyond Sea Cheats, ſome whereof he was an eye-witneſs, but becauſe they all concerned his own Sex, I deſired that he would give himſelf the trouble to recount ſomething of ours; undoubtedly, ſaid I, you were acquainted with the females abroad as well as at home, and I cannot be ſo ignorant to believe you have not converſed with them. Yes, replyed he, or elſe I had been to blame, and ſhould have loſt one of the principal ends I went for, If I had not been acquainted as well with the *Madam*, as the *Monſieur*; but, continued he, I do not think it proper to recount any of the frailties of women to one of that Sex, that diſcourſe is more proper with men when we triumph and boaſt of our witty encounters, and waggiſh overreachings of that Sex, But, replyed I to him, as you have done all this, and ſpent ſome time in the recitals, ſo I pray let me further engage you to acquaint me with ſomewhat of that nature. That you may ſee, replyed he, how much I am your Servant, I will obey you, and tell you two Stories of two women, who were excellent, and their Stories conſiderable different.

CHAP. III.

The Gentleman Soldier gives an account how he came acquainted with an extraordinary beautiful, yet ſeemingly reſerved Courtezan, *who ſlighting him having ſpent all upon her, he makes himſelf amends, by cheating her of what ſhe had gotten; he gains acquaintance with a Mercers Wife by a miſtake, or rather by Letters falling accidentally into his hands, that were ſent her by her* Inamoretto, *by which means he finds a ſufficient reward, beſides his ſenſual enjoyment of ſo lively and grateful a Miſtreſs.*

BE pleaſed to know then, continued he, that when I came firſt into *Paris*, I ſuppoſed that as I was young, handſome, and in a very rich gentle Garb, ſo I did believe that it would not be long e're I ſhould have ſome Meſſage or invitation from ſome Madam or other, but although I waited long for this Adventure, yet I met with nothing to that purpoſe, but all the *French*-Ladies although they are in their converſe open and free, yet come up cloſe to them, and they are as cold as *December* or that which is colder, Charity, they would not at all be ſo chariteble to me a ſtranger, as permit me to cloſe with them, ſo that I thought I muſt have returned from thence as wiſe as I went, for any thing I ſhould know of women; I finding that of my ſelf I could not do any thing, therefore I obſerved thoſe of my acquaintance what they did in that Caſe, and at length I found that for all their braggs they were as well furniſhed with Miſtreſſes as I was, and indeed had none, or at the leaſt

leaſt none at all that they durſt particularly own, but a poor common *Courteſanna:* I ſeeing there was no better to be had, was reſolved rather than fail to put in there, and to play at ſmall Game rather than ſtand out: wherefore I took the next opportunity of going with one of my acquaintance to one of thoſe houſes, but although I had faſted a great while, yet my ſtomach was ſo ſqueamiſh that I liked nothing that was there, but only in drinking and talking ſpent ſome time and ſo departed.

I was obſerved whileſt I was there by an old grave Matrona, who two or three days after, meeting me, alone, told me that ſhe had ſeen me at the houſe aforeſaid, by which ſhe could gueſs at my buſineſs, and finding that there was never a Diſh that liked my Pallat, and being deſirous to be civil to, and accommodate all ſtrangers, ſhe would pleaſure me ſo far, as to bring me acquainted with the moſt celebrated beauty of all *Paris*, I liked her Propoſition; firſt gave her thanks, and then told her if ſhe would name the time and place, I would gladly wait on her; She told me that ſhe was ready at all times and in all places to ſerve me, and that I might therefore appoint what time I pleas'd. I who had no buſineſs but my pleaſure anſwered that if ſhe would about four of the Clock in the afternoon come to the Place where we then were, I would not fail to meet her, ſhe telling me that ſhe would come at the time, we parted; I went to ſprucifie my ſelf and put Money in my pocket, and ſhe went as I ſuppoſe to prepare the Madam to receive me. The time being come, I went to the place appointed, where I met with my Conductreſs who already waited for me, I went with her, and in ſhort

time we arrived at the houſe intended, I was conducted up ſtairs, and received by the Lady with much kindneſs; the old woman made a Speech to us both, tending to the purpoſe intended, and then wine being call'd for and a Banquet, we regalled our ſelves, and ſpent our time in pleaſant converſation; the old woman knowing what I came for, in convenient time left me alone with the Lady, who permitted me to take the ſatisfaction I deſired, and then I giving her a handful of Crown-pieces, which was the key of the work, and ſhe promiſing me a continuance of her love. The old woman was again call'd for, when ſhe came we renewed our diſcourſe, which continuing for ſome time longer, I alſo giving ſomewhat to the old woman, and the Servants of the houſe, we ſoon after parted.

As I went to my lodging I conſidered of the Adventure I had met with, and the next day enquired what this Lady was, and upon enquiry found that ſhe was a Right *Bona Roba*, but ſuch an one that was not ordinary, but reſerved, and only kept company with the better ſort of *Monſieurs*, I was well enough pleas'd, with what had happened, and was reſolved during my ſtay in *Paris* to look no further after any female, and accordingly I often frequented her houſe, and was received as kindly as I could expect, I commanded the houſe in all I pleaſed, and lay there when I thought good; but this my pleaſure conſumed and confounded my pocket, and my allowance from *England* being but ſmall, was in ſhort time ſo waſted that I could not hold out to ſpend ſo largely as I had done, and as the ſtrength of my pocket decreaſed, ſo did her love diminiſh, and when I had no more mony, ſhe had

had no more love, *No longer pipe, no longer dance,* and now as others had formerly been denied, and kept out of her doors, to entertain me, ſo then the doors were ſhut againſt me for others; I was vexed at the baſeneſs and ingratitude of this woman, and reſolv'd to be revenged of her if I could, and I made it my only ſtudy to do ſo, I had written into *England* for mony, which was in ſhort time to come, till when I plaid the good husband, and ſtaid within doors, and ſo recovered my expences, ſo that when my mony came, I was in Capacity to put new Cloaths on my back, and good ſtore of Crowns in my pocket, I likewiſe borrowed ſome Rings of ſome of my acquaintance, to whom I communicated my deſign, deſiring their aſſiſtance, which they accordingly promiſed me. Being thus well furniſhed, and ſet out with good outſide, new Clothes, I again attempted to ſee my *quondam* Miſtreſs, but was the firſt time denied entrance, although I was ſo liberal as to give the Servant a Crown-piece, and thereby had the means to diſcover that I had more of the ſame in my pocket, but the next time that I came thither, I was admitted, and my Miſtreſs pleaſantly ſaluting me, told me that I was very welcome from my Voyage: I ask'd what Voyage? ſhe told me from *England*; I replyed I had not been there lately; ſhe told me that then ſome body had abuſed her and me both, and told lies of me; for, ſaid ſhe, I did not queſtion if you had been in theſe parts, but I ſhould have ſeen you, where you alwaies have been welcome; for, continued ſhe, you know that ſo long as I have a houſe you may command your welcome in it, I but, thought I, to little purpoſe, and concluded that all theſe terms of

welcome were but words of Diſſimulation, and would laſt no longer than my money did in pocket, but being reſolved to proſecute my deſign, I would not ſo far take notice of what ſhe ſaid as to quarrel with her about it, but uſing my former wonted freedom, I ſate down, and call'd for ſuch Wine and other things as I had a mind to, and ſpent two or three hours very pleaſantly with her; and by that means renewing my acquaintance, I gave no occaſion of diſtruſt of what I intended. During my ſtay there, I gave her the convenience of ſeeing a rich Gold Watch I had in my pocket, and ſeveral Rings I had on my fingers, and thy my pockets were very well lyned with Silver and Gold, and drawing out as much as was ſufficient, I delivered it to her Servant to provide a Supper againſt the next night, when I told her I would return and ſup, and lye there, ſhe telling me I ſhould be welcome, we for that time parted. I then went to two or three of my acquaintance who were to help me in my Deſign, and directing them what to do, the time appointed being come, I went to her houſe, and knowing that my Miſtreſs was a great Lover of wine, and that it would be neceſſary to make her drunk, I carried ſome bottles with me; being arrived there, ſhe again kindly welcomed me, and pleas'd her eyes with beholding my rich Suit of Cloaths, my Watch, Rings, and the fulneſs of my pockets, not queſtioning but that I would leave a good part of theſe behind me, but ſhe reckoned without her Hoſt, as I ſhall preſently tell you.

Supper being ready we ſate down at the Table, and did eat plentifully, but did drink more abundantly; I telling her that ſhe muſt be merry, ſhe to oblige

lige me drank of her Cups ſo roundly, that ſhe fell aſleep as ſhe ſate at the Table, from whence I cauſed her to be carried to bed, were ſhe was no ſooner laid, but ſhe fell a ſnoaring. I then having given the Servants a doſe of the ſame Liquor cauſed them to go to Bed, telling them that I could undreſs my ſelf, and go to bed without their aſſiſtance.

I then being alone looked about to ſee what was to be done, I there ſaw a Cabinet wherein was the womans Jewels and money, and looking a little further I ſaw her Cloathes, and ſome Plate, and not long after my friends whom I had appointed being come, I began to work, firſt I threw down out at the window her beſt Cloathes, and all my own, and by the help of her Garters I let down the Cabinnet, her Plate, and ſo much as the ſilver Candleſtick which we had uſed; this done, I left the window open, and then went to Bed to my Lady, who although ſhe ſlept hard at preſent, yet before morning ſhe awaked, and then we ſpent our time as we formerly had done; and being ſomewhat wearied, we again went to ſleep, but about an hour after awaking and finding that it was broad-day-light, I called out for the Servant to bring me my Clothes that I might riſe, in regard (as I ſaid) that I had ſome buſineſs to diſpatch that morning. But the Servant looking about for them and not ſeeing them, nor her Miſtreſſes, nor the Cabinets nor the Candleſticks, and miſſing many things, which ſhe had over night left in the Chamber, and ſeeing one of the Chamber windows open, ſhe cryed out, O Lord Madam, we are robb'd; at this cry her Miſtreſs drawing the Curtain, ask'd what was the matter for that noiſe? O Lord, replyed the wench,

wench, we are robb'd, for I cannot ſee your Clothes, your Cabinet, your Plate, nor ſeveral other things. Heavens forbid, ſaid the Miſtreſs, I hope you lye; no truly Miſtreſs, continued the wench. Where then, ſaid I, is my Clothes? They are likewiſe ſtoln, replied the Wench, for I cannot find them. At this word I ſeem'd to be mightily aſtoniſhed, and thereupon I ſaid,

Madam, put theſe Tricks and Gulleries upon others, and not upon me, who can ſee through all your diſguiſes, what do you intend, or think to chowſe me in this manner? How, my Love, replyed ſhe, what do you ſay? Now you ſee I am uterly ruin'd, is this all the comfort you will give me? No, no, replied I, you muſt ſing another ſong, or elſe i'le make you, becauſe you ſaw I came hither with good Clothes, and my pockets cramm'd with Money and Jewels, you think to catch me with this trick, making me believe that you have been robb'd, but I ſwear to you, continued I, that you ſhall not carry it thus, and that I will go to the Magiſtrate and have you and your Family every one of you clapt up; and having thus ſaid, I leapt out of the Bed, and naked as I was in my ſhirt, I went to the window and cryed out Thieves. This poor woman now more dead than alive, ſeeing that beſide her great loſs, ſhe was likely to receive a great affront, leap'd alſo out of the Bed, and falling about my neck, with lifted up hands, and tears in her eyes, begg'd of me to have pity on her, and that now after ſhe had loſt all, I would not go to ruine her quite in her Reputation; I therefore ſeemed to be moved with her Prayers, but ſaid to her, muſt I be forced to live here for want of Clothes to go out?

No

No (replyed ſhe) go to Bed again, and I will ſend to one of my friends to borrow a *Suit* of Clothes for you, and thereupon ſhe immediately ſent away to a *French*-Knight who was one of her Gallants, to borrow one of his beſt Suits of Clothes, pretending that ſhe had a fancy to diſguiſe her ſelf in mans apparel. The Meſſenger ſoon returning, and bringing a fair Suit of Clothes, and all other neceſſaries, I aroſe, dreſſed my ſelf, and taking my leave of my Miſtreſs, went to my friends, where upon examination of my Cabinet, I found that I had increas'd my ſtock to above twice as much treaſure as I had ſpent upon her, and a good Suit of Clothes into the bargain: He having finiſhed his Story (ſaid Miſtreſs *Dorothy*) I told him he was very hard hearted to uſe a poor Lady ſo, and one who had been ſo kind to him, and that although ſhe had refuſed him admittance when all his Mony was ſpent, there is ſome reaſon for it, for it is poſſible ſaid I, you would have brought her and your ſelf into extream beggery; well, replyed he, I know you are not a competent Judge in this caſe, and therefore I was unwilling to acquaint you with any of theſe matters; but, continued he, I will if you pleaſe, proceed in the other ſtory I promiſed you, and ſo conclude.

I deſiring him ſo to do, he went on thus: I being in this manner, ſaid he, revenged of one Miſtreſs, did reſolve to leave her off quite, leſt ſhe ſhould in time pay me off in my own Coin, and did endeavour to get another, but could not meet with or find any to my mind; but I and one of thoſe of my acquaintance who had aſſiſted me in my late exploit, one day talking of our female friends, told me that indeed, although he

he had not gain'd ſo much by a Miſtreſs at once as I had done by mine, yet he had ſuch a Miſtris as had bin not only pleaſing, but very profitable to him, for ſaid he, I can command fifty or a hundred Crowns at any time; I marry Sir, ſaid I, that is a good Miſtreſs indeed, and is more than ordinary; yes replyed he, ſhe is no ordinary perſon. I hearing him ſay ſo, knew it was to no purpoſe to ask her Name and Quality, but did reſolve ſo to watch him that I would find it out, I uſually therefore kept him Company and like his ſhadow ſtill attended him, but he being as cunning as I was crafty, ſo privately mannag'd his amours, that I could not poſſibly find him out, I therefore ſometimes lay with him, and took the opportunity of ſearching his Pockets for Letters, but found none, ſo that I was very doubtful of attaining my Ends, which was to diſcover who this unknown inviſible Lady was, I finding that my acquaintance was too cloſe to get any thing out of, was reſolved to take another courſe, and ſince I could not out-wit the Maſter, try if my Boy could out-wit his; I therefore inſtructed my Boy in what he was to do, and ordered him to get in with the other, and get out of him one time or other, whether he did not carry Letters to any Perſons, and to whom. My Boy was not ſo long about his Diſcovery as I had been about mine, for in a ſhort time he told me that the Boy was often employed to carry Letters to a Mercers Maid, who lived in the next ſtreet, and alſo to a Carrier who conveyed Letters to an Unkle; I now partly knowing the Who, was deſirous of knowing the What, and therefore ordered my Boy by one means or other to get one of his Letters and bring it unto me.

me. He ſo well diſcharged himſelf in this employ, that it was not long e're he brough tme one. I being very curious to know the Contents, ſoon opened it, for heating a Knife in the fire, I put it under the Seal' which melted the Wax in that place, and ſo it was open, w herein *I* found theſe expreſſions.

Madam,

I Am very ſorry that I am ſo unfortunate, that in the term of fourteen days I have not had the happineſs of waiting on you, ſure the old man is grown jealous, or which is worſe, you begin to ſlight me, or elſe ſome expedient might have been found to have deceived him; I ſhall ſay no more at preſent, referring the reſt of my Complaints till I ſee you, which happy minute I beſeech you haſten, or elſe you will very much afflict

Your conſtant Friend,

S. N.

When *I* had read the Letter, *I* was almoſt as much to ſeek as *I* was before, becauſe it was directed to one who was a Servant to the Mercer, but upon ſecond thoughts *I* doncluded, that although it was directed to the Maid, yet it might be intended to the Miſtreſs, as indeed it was; *I* having read the Letter, melted ſome wax and ſealed it again, the impreſſion of the old Seal remaining as fair as formerly. My Boy who brought it me, asked if he ſhould carry it again; *I* firſt, before *I* anſwered him, enquired of him how he came by it? he told me thus, that the other boy told him he had Letters to carry for his Maſter; and therefore, ſaid he, if you will go to the River and waſh, *I* have, ſaid he a good excuſe; *I* (ſaid my boy) told him that *I* would go with him if he would go ſtrait;

ſtrait, then to the River; he replyed, he was commanded to carry the Letter firſt, but *I* perſwaded him to go firſt to the River, to the end that *I* might ſerve you in what you commanded, and therefore being come to the water, *I* did not make ſo much haſt as he, but let him go to in, ſo ſoon as he was in the water, *I* ſearching his pockets, and finding this Letter came with all ſpeed and told the other boys that were there, that *I* would go in at a place a little further, and ſwim down to them; and ſo, Sir, ſaid he to me, *I* made all poſſible haſte, and have here brought the Letter; *I* having heard his Tale, commanded him to run with all expedition, and put the Letter into the boyes pocket, he did ſo, and was not at all diſcovered, or ſuſpected. *I* having thus gained ſome knowledge in my friends amours and being deſirous to diſcover more, walked out to the Street where the Mercer dwelt, where *I* ſaw both man and wife in the Shop, there was much diſparity in their years, for he ſeemed to be ſeventy, and ſhe not above twenty four, *I* preſently gueſſed that this muſt be ſhe, and therefore pretending to buy, *I* went into the Shop, where *I* was ſhewed ſeveral Stuffs by her, he ſitting at the further end of the ſhop coughing by himſelf; ſhe had ſuch a winning way in perſwading me to the goodneſs and cheapneſs of the Stuff, that although I had no intention to buy, yet I laid out ſome money with her, ſhe was perfectly handſome, and it had been great pity if ſhe had onely been tyed to that old Carcaſs, but I knew that ſhe had a friend who could do her buſineſs for her, and all that I then wiſhed, was that I might be in his place, and take his turn; and this I was reſolved to do, or ſtretch my wit on the tenters of invention.

The

The next day my Boy brought me another Letter, which was from my Companions Unkle, and I having opened that as I had done the former, found that his Unkle was ſick, but however intended to be in *Paris* in few days, and then he would ſupply him with the money he deſired; I cloſed the Letter again, and the boy conveyed it to the place where he had it, *viz.* the other boys pocket, who gave it to his Maſter two hours after when he returned home, being for the preſent gone out; by this Letter I underſtood that he had his maintenance from his Unkle, and that he had lately written for ſome, and that this was the anſwer; I took exact notice of his Unkles name, and writ it down in my Table book; I being deſirous to diſcover from himſelf what I partly knew already, to that end I walked out with him, and engaged him to go into that Street where the Mercer dwelt, but although we did ſo, and I then curiouſly obſerved him, yet he did not ſo much as caſt an eye into the Shop, although the Woman and her Husband were both there, but I remember turning down by that Shop into a blind Lane, he looked towards a back-door, which I then perceived was belonging to that houſe, and which I gueſſed might be the way whereby he went to his Miſtreſs.

I having made all theſe inſpections into the matter in hand, was reſolved to make ſome further uſe of my experience. When about ten days after my boy came ſweating to me, and told me that he had gotten another Letter, which the other boy received in his Maſters abſence, who would not be back in two hours, but then he muſt deliver it to him; who brought it? ſaid I, a Porter: ſaid the Boy; I hearing this

this had a mind to have delivered it back again without opening, because I did suppose it came only from his Unkle, or some other Friend, about some ordinary affairs, not judging that a Letter of Love would be sent by an ordinary Porter; I was in this determination, which had I followed I should have thougnt my self very unfortunate, but a curiosity possessing me, I resolved to see the Contents, wherefore using my former way of heating my Knife, I opened the Letter, and therein found these Lines:

My dear Friend,

I Hope at your last visit I gave you satisfaction in every thing, especially why I had not seen you for fourteen days before, I must confess it was a long time of absence and you may assure your self that I thought it so as well as you, I also hope that you have no suspition of my constancy, and that you may assure your self of my love to you, I have provided the hundred Crowns you desired, if you come on Thursday night about eleven of the Clock to our Back door, our trusty Servant will let you in, and conduct you to a Chamber, where I will attend you, but I must engage you not to speak to me, for I am in great fear of your being over-heard, by my Husbands Kinswoman, who lies the next wall to me, and is very curious over me; follow these directions and you shall engage,

Your constant Friend,

M. L.

How much was I surpriz'd in the reading of this Letter, you may easily judge, but you may be sure I was resolved not to part from it, but now I concluded I might put my Design in practice; I had not long

long consulted with my self what ot do, but I had resolved my self in all doubts and scruples; and therefore taking Pen, Ink and Paper, I writ this following Letter:

Sir,

YOur Unkle, according to his intentions of coming to Paris, *was come so far as my house, but was there taken so sick, that he could not, neither is he able at present to proceed in his Journey, and doubting that he will be worse, hath ordered me to send to you that you may be acquainted with it, and withal, that you may come to him, he being not able to come to you, therefore expects you here with all the expedition you can make, this is all at present from*

Your loving Friend,
though unknown,
L. T.

The Letter being thus written, I dated it two days before, and subscribed it from an Inn in a Town forty miles off from *Paris*, it was directed to him in the usual manner and form; and so having seal'd it, I gave it my Boy, who soon conveyed it to the place where he had the other. And that my Project might take effect, I went immediately to find him out, resolving to keep him continually in my sight, and oversee all his Actions, from the time he should receive his Letter, till I should see him on Horseback, on his Journey. I soon found him out, and went home with him, where the Boy gave him the Letter, he opened it, and retired, I gave him the conveniency of reading it, which he soon did, and coming up to me, told me that he had hasty News; is it private? replyed I;

no, said he, but I think I must leave your company for a few days; when, said I? To morrow morning, said he; that is much replyed I, sure it is hasty News indeed, if you must be gone so soon; yes truly, said he, you may see the Letter, and then you may judge of the matter; hereupon he delivered me the Letter, which I having read over, told him that indeed if this Unkle, who was sick, was as nearly allied to him in friendship, as he was in consanguinity, that then it was necessary he should suddenly obey his orders. He is, replyed he, not only my Unkle, but my Father, For I never knew no other Father I had; for my Father his Brother died, when I was but six months old, and left me and my Estate to his disposing; neither continued he, hath he any Child or Relation nearer than I am; I told him that if it were so, I would advise him not to let any time slip, but to take Horse and be gon that night; he was unwilling so to do, for, said he, I have another affair to dispatch that is of considerable consequence. I supposing it was his Love business, and being resolv'd to bear him off from all proceeding therein at the present, fearing lest he should send some Letter, and so my design would be frustrate, I therefore said, that nothing whatever should hinder me from present going, if I were in his condition, and if he would communicate his other affairs to me, I would act for him all that I could to my power; he answered me that the affairs he meant were of such a quality, that none but himself could dispatch; I replyed, that I then supposed they might be of some Love-concern, to this he only laughed, and finding that he had a great inclination to do somewhat in that nature that might spoil my design; I therefore used so

many

many arguments with him to cauſe him to begin his Journey, that I ſaw him that Evening, on horſeback, with a reſolution to ride twenty miles onwards of his Journey that night, that ſo he might reach the end of it the next day betimes.

And now I having diſpatc'd him out of the way, did not queſtion but I might accompliſh my deſign as I had determin'd. It was then but Tueſday night, and the time appointed by the Letter was Thurſday night, ſo that till then I waited with ſome impatience, but the hour being come, I went to the Place, which was the Back-door, which I had formerly taken notice of. I was ſo deſirous of finiſhing the Adventure I was about, that I had made more haſte than ordinary, and being come ſomewhat before the preciſe time, I was forced to wait, not daring to knock leſt I ſhould offend. But long I had not ſtaid, before an adjoyning Clock ſtruck eleven, and within leſs than a minute afterwards the door opened, and a Female looking out, and ſeeing me walk, beckoned me to come on; I did ſo, and without one words ſpeaking, entred the houſe, and following my Conductreſs cloſe at the heels, went up ſtairs, and coming to a Chamber door, ſhe only ſaid, now Sir, you may enter there to your and my Miſtreſs, and ſtay till I come and call you, which will be about two hours hence, but I pray be ſure you talk not, leſt that diſcover you; I liſtened attentively to what was told me, and promiſing obedience only by a Bow which I made, the Servant left me, and I entred the Chamber; although there was no Candle, yet I could ſee where the Bed ſtood, and going thither I ſaw my Miſtreſs whom I ſaluted, and then retiring pul'd off my

Clotees and leap'd into Bed to her, I lay down by her, and during the two hours time I ſtaid, you may be ſure I was not idle, I made no noiſe by ſpeaking, knowing that it might be of dangerous conſequence in a double manner; and the two hours being come, our attendant came and told me it was time to riſe, I though unwilling enough did ſo, and putting on my Clothes was ſoon dreſs'd, and coming once more to kiſs my Miſtreſs, ſhe told me ſoftly that in the window in a Purſe was the hundred Crowns ſhe promis'd, I making her a profound Reverence, and kiſſing her hand, went thither, and finding the Purſe, put it into my pocket, and the Maid haſtning me, I departed, when ſhe came to the Back-door, ſhe told me that e're many days, ſhe would find a way how I might enjoy my Miſtreſs with more freedom; I pulling a Crown out of my pocket, put it into her hand and bade her goodnight: And thus, ſaid the young Gentleman, did I obtain my Ends upon this Gentlewoman; and (ſaid he) I being now entred was reſolved to proceed, and therefore the next day went again by the door, and ſeeing none but her ſelf in the Shop, I entred, and deſired to ſee ſilk enough for a New Suit; ſhe ſhew'd it me, and I ſoon agreed on the price, giving her own demands, but when I came to pay, and drew out the purſe ſhe had given me which was a very remarkable one; ſhe looked very wiſhfully on it; Nay Madam ſaid I, it is the ſame I receiv'd of you laſt night, how! repiled ſhe, am I betraid then? No dear Madam, ſaid I, there is no Treachery in the Caſe, onely the exceſs of my love to you, made me run a great hazard; I hope, Sir, replyed ſhe, you are not guilty of any murder of my form

former friend: no Madam, (said I) I have only by a piece of Wit remov'd him at present; well, Sir, (replied she) you seem to be a Gentleman of that temper that you will not wrong a Woman, I have not time or opportunity to discourse you at large, but that I might engage yo to secrecy, I not only freely give you the money you have in possession, but also I desire you to accept this Stuff you intended to buy, and I pray with your first conveniency let me have an Account of this strange Adventure; I had hardly time to answer her (You shall Madam) but her Husbands Kinswoman came near us, all that I could do was to deliver the parcel to my Boy, and making the ordinary Reverence. I departed.

CHAP IV.

Mistress Dorothy *finishes the Story of the Gentleman-Soldier and Mercers Wife; who being returned to* England, *renews his Suit to his old Mistress, though married to another, whose weakness made the match unsuitable, whose Estate depending on an Heir, and this Husband uncapable of getting one, gave the Gentleman that opportunity whereby he at once had a Wife, an Heir, and an Estate.*

THus (continued the young Gentleman) did I initiate my acquaintance with this woman, which is one of the best and pleasantest Adventures of my life, and indeed, said he, I have no cause to complain of women, for that Sex hitherto hath been very lucky to me, as you may guess by my Story of the *Courtezan*, whose Cabinet and other things I conveyed away; and now by this second *French* adventure I was likely to gain more, and that more honourably than by the other. But, continued he, in six days after my Companion returned from his Journey; I asked him if we must not all have Stabies; Why? said he; because, replied I, I suppose thar your Unkle is dead, and hath left you all he hath: No such matter, replied he, but I could wish that he were hang'd that writ the Letter; why? said I, I think it was very carefully done, of him, and that he deserved not only thanks, but a Reward; I should reward him if I knew who he was, said he: Why, cannot you find him? said I; No, nor no body else, said he, there is no such sign nor no such man, living in or near that Town.

Town, nor in all that Countrey, that I could hear of; but I hope (said I) there was and is such an Unkle; yes, reply'd he, and Heavens be praised, in health too, but I was forc'd to go further a field to find him, for after I had spent a whole day in fruitless search for the Host, who sent the Letter, and could not hear of any Tale nor Tidings of him, I being within thirty miles of my Unkles habitation, thought it very proper to ride on thither, and so I did, but when I came I found him well and lusty, I shewed him the Letter, and thereby he knew the occasion of my Journey, but he knew not who writ it, and he and I both concluded it was a trick put upon me, however we were joyful to see one another well, and he intended to take a journey to *Paris* in few days, to order me some moneys but since I was come my self, he resolved to desist from that Journey, and give me Bills of Exchange, fain he would have engaged me to have staid there for some days longer, but telling him I had affairs of consequence to dispatch at *Paris*, that required my presence, he gave me leave to depart; and so, said he, with all possible expedition I am returned: and you are very welcome (replyed I) but this was a very strange adventure of the Letter, and I cannot tell to what purpose, nor I neither said he, but I hope to find it out, for I preserve the Letter carefully. I gave him the hearing, and now knowing his thoughts, I believed my self obliged to mind his Actions; as for the Letter he had, and his Design of finding out the Writer of the Letter by the hand, I knew he could not, for although I writ it, yet it was in such a hand as I never writ before, and which I then writ on purpose not to be discovered by it, If he should be acquainted with

my hand, as hitherto he was not, wherefore I car'd not for that, but my chiefeſt care was in charging my Boy to watch his, and knowing that he would ſuddenly write a Letter to ſend to his Miſtreſs, I commanded him to uſe all poſſible diligence to get it into his Cuſtody, and bring it to me, as being a matter of very great conſequence.

My Boy followed my directions ſo carefully, that he attained his ends, but with much difficulty, for no ſooner was my friend parted from me, but he writ a Letter to his Miſtris, and giving it to the Boy, charged him immediately to carry it: My Boy who waited all his motions, ſeeing him running with a Letter in his hand, asked him what haſte? great haſte, ſaid the Boy, and would have proceeded, but my boy caught hold on him, and ſaid, how now, what is your haſte ſo great that you cannot ſpare time to drink with your friends? time enough for that anon, ſaid the Boy, and would have proceeded; but my Boy knowing how ſtrictly I had charged him about this Letter, was reſolv'd by Hook or by Crook to be Maſter of it, and therefore told him, that although he had not been ſo civil as to give him his Foy when he went out (for he had been the Journey with his Maſter) yet he would now give him his Welcome home. The other underſtanding there was drinkin the caſe, and that of free-coſt, went in with him to the next Drinking-houſe, and my boy knowing what a work he had in hand, calling for a quart of Wine, deſired a Room above ſtairs, ſo that up they went, and my Boy intending to ſuddle the other, cheated him in his drink, for after two or three Glaſſes were off, and the other boy began to be merry, my Boy drank water, and

and the other wine, ſo that in ſhort time he was knock'd down, and fell aſleep; and it was not long e're he took the Letter out of his pocket, and that he might make all ſure, he lock'd the Chamber door, bringing the Key with him, and thus he ſecuring the Letter, and boy both; came to me, and brought me the Letter, which I immediately opened, and read theſe words:

Madam,

EVer ſince that fortunate Minute wherein I firſt had the happineſs to be acquainted with you, my ſtars I thank them have been very propitious to me; and Dame Fortune (how unconſtant ſoever ſhe hath been to others) hath yet been to me very favourable, ſo that till within theſe few days I could boaſt that no malevolent Planet hath had any malign influence in my aſcendant; I thought and hoped I ſhould have lived and died in this opinion; but I now have cauſe enough to change my mind, for I have lately had ſuch a croſs adventure, that I yet know not what to think of it, but if all be right and well with you, I then bid defiance to fortune; Madam, I am very unquiet and much puzzeld, ſo that I know not how to begin, nor well know what to ſay to you, but hoping you will pardon this impertinence, and attribute it to my perplexity; I ſhall thus plainly begin with you, and this it is: Madam, about ten days ſince when I laſt was with you, among other Requeſts I deſired a hundred Crowns of you for a preſent uſe, till my Unkle whom I every day expected ſhould come to Town; in regard you never refuſed me any thing, I did not doubt of that, and therefore expected to hear from you accordingly, but juſt at that time

time when I expected a Letter from you, I received one from my Unkle, as I thought, whereby, as that Letter inform'd me, I thought it abſolutely neceſſary to leave Paris, *and go to him forty miles, to a Town where he lay ſick, I was perſwaded to be gone immediately, and indeed over-rul'd by an intimate friend, and one that I have ſo great a reſpect for, that I had no reaſon to ſuſpect, and what he urged being as I thought reaſonable: I ſoon mounted on Horſe-back, and departed, I muſt beg your pardon that I did not acquaint you with this ſudden remove, but it was impoſſible to do it without ſuſpition of my Friend from whom I have hitherto conceal'd our amours, as I have done from all the world beſides.*

This Letter which I received, I found was but forged, and written on purpoſe to cauſe me to leave the City, but if in my abſence I have not received ſome prejudice in your opinion, I account all the reſt of my trouble and vexation as nothing, wherefore I pray Madam, let me know in what condition I am with you, and whether you know any thing, and what you do know of this Adventure, and I ſhall always remain

Your conſtant Friend,

S. N.

When I had read this Letter, I found that half my work was done to my hand, for I was reſolved to write to this woman, and now having a fit opportunity I writ as followeth.

Madam,

SOme months ſince I had occaſion to lay out ſome money in ſome Stuff, and my good fortune guiding

me

me to your Shop, I there not only ſaw, but pitied you, for that I ſaw you were wedded to one more fit to be your Father than Husband; that pity begot love, and that ſo violent, that I knew not how to ſuppreſs it, I thought it might be poſſible to be favourably receiv'd by you, but knew not how to make my Addreſſes to you, leſt your honour ſhould be brought in queſtion, I therefore waited all opportunities, and at length found one, the moſt lucky that could befal: for my friend Mounſieur N. *being abſent and a Letter of yours coming into my hands, I had a great curioſity to ſee it, doubting that it was, what indeed I found it to be, a Letter of Love; but when I found that it was from you, and that thereby was a particular appointment for him to come to you; I was mightily pleas'd, and you may judge the great ſatisfaction I receiv'd. My love towards you being ſo violent, I was reſolv'd to hazard my friendſhip to him, and rather than fail, be a Traitor; and indeed, what would I not have done, to have had the happineſs of enjoying you? Therefore Madam, knowing his abſence would be abſolutely neceſſary, it was I that fram'd that Letter which cauſed his Journey, and thereby I had the happineſs in his ſtead to be well uſed by you and now Madam, you may unfold the Riddle, but I hope you are ſo diſcreet as to conceal the truth of this Adventure, which were it diſcovered, would be of dangerous conſequence, not only to us both, but alſo to your own Reputation; I judge you will conceal it, and hope you will give me other opportunities of waiting on you, when I ſhall acquaint you particularly how I came by that Letter and this; Thus hoping that I may enjoy the ſecond place if not the firſt in your eſteem, I reſt*

Your moſt ardently affectionate Friend, *M. G.*

This

This Letter being written, I encloſed it in the other, and gave it my Boy, who ran immediately to the houſe, where he left his drunken Companion, and opening the door, he made ſo much noiſe as awaked him, wherefore my Boy ſeeing him ready to riſe, ran to him, and inſenſibly convey'd the Letter into his pocket.

The Boy being now pretty ſober, remembred the Errant he was ſent about, and doubting he ſhould be chid would needs depart about it; my Boy permitted him ſo to do, and ſo came home to me,

And thus Miſtreſs *Dorothy* (ſaid he to me) did I diſcover the whole intreague of this buſineſs to my Miſtreſs, and ſhe ſoon after ſent a Letter to me, and another to my Friend, wherein ſhe manag'd the Concern ſo tenderly and ſo handſomely, that ſhe ſatisfied him and me both, and I having a Summons from her, waited on her three miles out of the Town, where I acquainted her with all that ſhe was ignorant of, and I preſſed her ſo with my affection, that ſhe accepted me, and I think in time I had the firſt place in her affection: and thus ſaid he, did I live the pleaſanteſt life in the world, all the time that I ſtaid in *Paris*; and now I hope, ſaid he, I have ſatisfied you with my amours, which hitherto had been very fortunate, and I thank my Stars, *Venus* hath been ever my Friend, or elſe I had not had the happineſs of your acquaintance, and thus did he fully finiſh his diſcourſe.

And now, ſaid Miſtreſs *Dorothy*, I have related all that I think is convenient and neceſſary about my Gentleman Soldier, and therefore I ſhall conclude that Story; No, ſaid I, I have ſome queſtions to ask you, which I deſire to be ſatisfied in, and which I believe will

will engage you in a little further diſcourſe: That which I am firſt to deſire of you is, that ſince you have entertained us ſo largely, and indeed preſantly, with the adventures of the Gentleman Soldier, that you would tell us what became of him, and what more you know of him? for, continued I, I am perſwaded that all you can ſay of him is ſo conſiderable, that it is worth our hearing, and your recital. Truly, replyed Miſtreſs *Dorothy*, I have indeed ſomewhat more to ſay of him, which may be as pleaſant as the reſt, but his Stories being only things by the by, and which do not at all concern you, and me very little, I thought what hath been ſaid already is enough, but if you will needs hear me proceed further, I will not refuſe you the ſatisfaction you deſire.

I have already, told you of his two *French* Adventures, neither did he tell me of any thing more that befel him in *France* which was conſiderable; but he having quitted that Countrey, and being come to *England*,, it was not long e're I came acquainted with him, and our acquaintance proceeding to a familiarity, he not only related to me all thoſe adventures I have already recited, but he alſo told me the condition and ſtate of his affairs at preſent: He told me that he left *England* upon a diſcontent, for he having been in love with a young Gentlewoman, one of his own age and Quality, and that ſo long and effectually, that he had won her to conſent to marriage, provided her Parents did ſo: but when they came acquainted with his pretentions, they abſolutely refus'd it, for no other reaſon, but that his eſtate did not equal hers, for ſhe was the only Child of her Parents, who were very rich, and he although he was equal to her in birth,

yet

yet in Eſtate he came far ſhort, as being a younger Brother, and having but a ſmall allowance or patrimony, nor indeed was there much probability of any increaſe or addition to his Eſtate: This was the Conſideration why he was refuſed, and therefore having again tryed his Ladies mind, who although ſhe loved him well, yet was reſolved in her marriage to be wholly guided by her Friends, and finding himſelf fruſtrated in his hopes, and expectations, he therefore became melancholly and diſcontent, ſo that to throw off that indiſpoſition which this had cauſed, he reſolved for Travel, and thereupon to *France* he went, where as I have told you, *Venus* made him ſome amends for the diſſatisfaction he had had in *England*, but in time he being weary of that place, and returning home, he found his Miſtreſs married to another, who had been more fit for a winding-ſheet than ſo young and fair a Bride, for although he who had married her was not very old, yet he was in a deep Conſumption, and thereby wholly incapacitated to pleaſe a Lady. That which made her Friends impoſe this Choice upon her, was his great wealth: In this condition he found her at his return, and conſidering the Condition ſhe was in, he had ſome hopes one day of enjoying her, either as a Wife or Miſtreſs; to this end he made ſome Addreſſes to her, but they being taken notice of by her Parents, but more eſpecially by her Husband, ſhe was forced to command him to forbear any more viſits; with much unwillingneſs he did obey her, but it was but for a while, for he getting acquainted with her Chamber-maid, who was flexible enough, or eaſie to be made ſo by Gifts or Preſents he beſtowed on her at preſent, and large pro-

promiſes of what he would do for the future, ſo that in ſhort time he won her to be at his diſpoſe, and to betray her Maſters ſecrets. Whereupon, when her Maſter was abſent, ſhe preſently gave him notice of it, and perſwaded her Miſtreſs to walk abroad to ſuch places where he was ſure to meet her. She like a Woman of much vertue and conſtancy, for a large time held out, and would not ſo much as entertain any converſation with him, but in the end by his humble and amorous Letters and fervent Proteſtations of a vertuous love, promiſing her that he deſigned nothing againſt her virtue, and ſince he could not enjoy her Love, that he might have the firſt place in her eſteem; ſhe at length conſented to treat with him, and now he being admitted to treat, by degrees inſinuated his old love and great misfortune, he let her know his great conſtancy, which as it had, ſo it ſhould continue with him till death, theſe diſcourſes and other arguments which he us'd, were as the Bellows to blow up a flame out of the very aſhes where it had long lain, ſo that as ſhe conld not deny but that ſhe had formerly loved him, and that moſt tenderly, ſo ſhe could have done ſo ſtill, had ſhe not been married, but being married, ſhe told him ſhe muſt baniſh all thoughts of former love: but as he had now brought her to confeſs a former love, ſo he left not off there, but by degrees perſwaded her to a new friendſhip, not a new one, but a renewing of the old; and as friendſhip had been the firſt ſtep to their former love, ſo it was now, and ſhe in a ſhort time confeſſed that as ſhe had, ſo ſhe ſtill did love him; in fine he brought her to this paſs, that ſhe confeſſed ſhe lov'd him as well as ever, and were ſhe free to chooſe a Husband,

ſhe

ſhe would chuſe him before all the World; he having gain'd thus much upon her, by degrees proceeded further, and he promiſing to remain always unmarry'd, in expectation of that time, that ſhe might be free to marry; ſhe promiſed him that if ever that time came, that ſhe would certainly marry him before all the perſons in the world. At this point they continued for ſome moneths, and her Husbands Conſumptive-diſtemper encreaſing, there was great hopes that in ſhort time it would ſend him to the other world, where he was wiſhed to be with all earneſtneſs. As their converſe continued, ſo their love encreaſed, and he became impatient of delays, and was ſo bold as to deſire of her the only thing ſhe had refus'd him, but very angry ſhe was when he firſt made the propoſition; wherefore he was forced to forbear any further diſcourſe of that nature, but her Husbands lingring Diſtemper continuing, our Lover was out of all patience, and therefore he was once again reſolved to propound that to her, without the enjoymen of which, he could not be happy nor quiet, wherefore being reſolv'd what to do, he was now to think how to do it, and believing that if he ſhould begin any diſcourſe upon a ſubject which ſhe hitherto had wholly diſlik'd, he ſhould be interrupted and not heard out, and it may be ſhe would proceed into ſome violent language againſt him, wherefore he was reſolv'd to communicate his thoughts to her in writing, and there he intended to be very plain with her, whereupon he writ, and ſent her this Letter.

Madam,

Madam,

IT is now some years since I first began to affect you, and that affection in time became so violent, that I was forc'd to discover it to you, you did not at all dislike it at first, for in little time I found a tender esteem from you, which by my constancy and perseverance was so encreas'd, that I perceiv'd you did also love me, neither were you asham'd to own the affection you had for me, but made me protestations of a love that should be lasting, and there was nothing wanting, as we thought to make us both happy, but the consent of your Parents; but that not being gained, I preferr'd your interest and quiet before my own, and not being able to live near you, and not see and love you, which by the inhumanity of your friends I was forbid to do, I entred into a voluntary banishment, and leaving all the enjoyments and pleasures of my own Countrey, went into another, hoping in time that fortune who had been so cross to me might be more favourable, but although I staid sometime in Forreign parts, and at my return heard of my misfortuns, and indeed your as unfortunate marriage, yet time had not banished you out of my thoughts, I still had you perfectly in remembrance, and found that my love to you was so far from being extinguished, that it was then ready to burst out into a new flame. The obstacle of your being married and thereby of the impossibility of my attaining my ends, did not hinder me from endeavouring it, and I did so constantly persevere in my endeavours, that I brought you not only to a mute compliance, but by degrees I brought you to acknowledge that you still loved me, and that if you were ever free to chuse, I should be the happy man whom you would have for a Husband, the con-

stancy of my affection hath wrought this miracle, but I cannot perswade you to proceed further, and this at present is the state of the matter between us. Now Madam, having done all this, I am perswaded you may yield to what I further desire of you: I know the strictness of your Virtue absolutely forbids you any thoughts, but I pray let me be plain with you, and pardon these expressions which I shall use to you, although you may judge them immodest: Madam, you have promised to make me your Husband when it is in your power, and I believe it is in your thoughts that one day you may do it, for he who is your present Husband, appears to me and all the world to be half dead already; He being in this condition, why will you not permit me to reap the fruits of a long affection? but anticipating that happy time that I hope must and will come; and Madam, beside these Reasons, I believe and hope it will be for your profit, for I understand the Condition of your marriage runs thus, that if he dies without Issue by you, then his Estate returns to his next Heir, and thereby you will be never the better for your marriage, and all this time you have spent with him, is time ill spent and lost; but if you will permit me, I hope to prevent the losing of the Estate, for I question not but there is so great a harmony in our affections, that a Child will proceed from us, and then when you lose your Husband, you will not lose your Estate. This Madam, is good policy, and although in the strictness of your virtue you may not entertain any such thoughts, yet I am confident you may live to repent the not doing it, Therefore hoping that these reasons will be sufficient to overru'e you and that I offer this as much for your content as my own, I ever rest, Your constant Lover *M. G.*

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Mistress Dorothy *having finished this last Story, relates how a woman by her own confession, at her Husbands death discovered the common inconstancy of the Sex, and her disloyalty to her Husband, by being provided before hand.*

THis (continued Mistress *Dorothy*) was the Letter that our Lover sent to his Mistress, whose chast thoughts engag'd her in a great anger against him, but whether it were real or feign'd you may judge by the sequel, for it was not long e're he was admitted into her favour, and then having the liberty of converse, and being resolv'd to prosecute his intentions, he so back'd his Letters with arguments, that caused her to give a mute compliance, and silence, being the best token of consent, he by that gathered that she did yield, wherefore he again engaging the Chamber-maid in his Designs, and acquainting her that her Mistress had yielded to him in every particular but enjoyment, neither did she refuse him that, he desired her to stand his Friend so far, as to be instrumental in giving him the opportunity to come to her Bed-side when she lay alone, as it was usual with her to do; The Chamber-maid believing that she should not anger her Mistress, and obliege her Friend, and being willing to further and not hinder any sport, was not long e're she gave our Lover his desir'd satisfaction; for she bringing him to the Chamber when her Mistress was in Bed, there left him. He who was not ignorant how to deal with a Lady soon over-rul'd

her, and ſhe ſeeing it was to no purpoſe to reſiſt, with a kind of willing unwillingneſs permitted him to come to Bed to her; what they did you may judge by the event, for in convenient time ſhe diſcovered her ſelf to be with Child, ſhe frequently lying with her husband alſo; and being with Child her Husband was an overjoy'd man, and did hope, that as he concluded himſelf able to get a Child, ſo he might in time be reſtored to his former health: Our Lovers though they often met, yet they uſed all warineſs and circumſpection, and our Gallant to take off the opinion of his ſtill courting his old Miſtreſs, began a Courtſhip with a new one, or at leaſt pretended ſo to do, and thus the time was ſpent till ſuch time as her time came to be delivered of a Child, which proving to be a brave lufty Boy, gave great joy to all parties, eſpecially to the ſuppoſed Father, who was much joyed that he had ſo hopeful an Heir to enjoy his Eſtate, and his Wife being again ſtrong, and having layn in her full time, he again accompanied her; but in ſhort time after he piqu'd off, and as he had deceived his wife in his life time, ſo now in his death he cheated the very worms, for they expecting a full body, found nothing but a meer Skelleton to feed on, you may be ſure our Lover was joyful enough at the ſo long wiſhed for, and now happy News of the death of his Rival, neither was his wife much diſcontented, although by her outward deportment ſhe made the world believe that ſhe was a moſt diſconſolate widow, and ſhe was ſo reſerv'd that for ſome time ſhe kept her Chamber, and much longer kept within doors, not viſiting any body, nor permitting any body to viſit her but her Parents, and thoſe

thoſe who were neareſt related to her Husband. However ſhe and her intended Husband held a Correſpondency, but it was but with Letters, which were interchanged by her Chamber-maids aſſiſtance; In time all theſe mourning Solemnities were over, and ſhe appear'd abroad again as reſplendent as the *Sun*, and the fame of her plentiful Eſtate, great vertue, and charming beauty, drew to her many Adorers, whoſe buſineſs was Sirreverence, Love; ſhe who was reſolv'd what Inſtrument ſhe would play on, and what Pipe ſhould make her muſick for the future, gave them all the hearing, but was abſolute in her anſwers.

Her Parents ſeeing ſhe had ſo many Suiters, deſired her to make choice of one of them, and again engage her ſelf in a matrimonial Life, ſhe replyed, that in time ſhe might again be perſwaded to do ſo, but when ever ſhe gave her conſent to alter her condition, ſhe intended to be more curious than ſhe had been, and to have more freedom in her choice; They replyed, that indeed they had in a manner impos'd the former Match upon her, which had been fortunate enough, but however, when ſhe had a mind to alter her condition, ſhe ſhould have all poſſible freedom in her Choice. She being thus left to her own diſpoſe, in ſhort time permitted her old Sweet-heart to make one in the number of her Suiters, what he wanted of Means to carry on his buſineſs the more ſplendidly withal, ſhe ſupplied him, ſo that for Gallantry and good Mien, he out-did all her other Suiters, and being confident of Succeſs in his undertaking, he baffl'd them, all who were a Company of whining obſequious Lovers, ſo that at his appearance in full luſtre,

they like ſtars at the day and Suns approach, ſhrink back, and diſapear'd; leaving him to Rule, and Reign Soveraign in that heart where he already had full poſſeſſion, and now ſhe being abſolutely at her own diſpoſe, ſhe told the world that ſhe thought ſhe was oblieg'd to reward his great conſtancy, by permitting him to be what he had ſo long deſired to be, her Husband: and therefore he was married to her; and now both their joyes, were compleated, and they both thought themſelves fully recompenced, for their many troubles and ſo long ſtay, eſpecially when they conſidered how much better their condition was now than it would have been had they been married at ſuch time as they both at firſt deſired; for although he concluded that his Predeceſſor had poſſeſt her, yet it had coſt him dear, for his Eſtate was all given in Exchange, and now lawfully inveſted and ſettled on a Child, who although he and all the world believed to be his lawful Heir, yet they knew the contrary, and our Lover was Father of a Son and Heir the firſt day of his marriage, and which was the greateſt Paradox, ſuch a Child as he did conclude was of his own begetting; and now ſhe did not (I ſuppoſe) repent of the counſel he had given her, and which they together had put in practice, to the great ſatisfaction of them both; Theſe Conſiderations (ſaid Miſtreſs *Dorothy*) I think were very conſiderable, and conduced much to their ſatisfaction, and now, ſaid ſhe, I think you can expect no more relations of this nature, for in this condition I left our two Lovers, and here I ſhall put an end to all that I know of his Adventures.

I ſeeing that Miſtreſs *Dorothy* had done, and finding that ſhe had fully finiſhed her diſcourſe, told her

that

that I wish'd all true Lovers, no worse a conclusion of their amours than these two had; but, continued I it was well that they managed their affairs so privately, that neither her Parents nor Friends had any suspition of him, for if they had, it might have fallen out worse with them, and this our recital puts me in mind of a small story that I have heard, which in regard it somewhat resembles yours I shall presently relate to you, and thus it was:

A young-woman had (by the over-ruling and perswasions of friends) permitted her self to be married to an old man, who lived some years with her, but we was soon weary of his Company, and being free in her converse and carriage, gave opportunity to several young men to court her, her Husband saw it, but without any possibility of redressing the same, for he being old and feeble, and she young, obstinate, and wilful, did rule the Roast her self, and so disturb'd and vex'd him, that it shortned his days. When he was on his Death-Bed, and believed he should die, he like a good Christian was resolv'd to be in Charity with all the world, but his wife had so cross'd and affronted him, that she who of all the world he should be most in charity with, was most out of his books, and he was resolv'd to put her out of his Will too as much as he could, she believing that he would die indeed, and that it might be to her prejudice if he should die in the minde he was then in, was resolved if possible to put him into a better mind, and therefore she attended, pleased, and humored him, in every thing that it was possible to do; he seeing so great a change in her carriage, changed his mind also, and being now very weak, and just at deaths door, made

his Will, and in good and orderly manner named her his loving Wife, and making her full and sole Executrix of that his last Will and Testament, gave her all he had, and now having seal'd his Will and given it into her custody, he would also give her his blessing, and told he was in full and absolute Charity with her and all the world, only he desired one request of her, which he praid her to grant him, and not be angry at the proposition he should make her; she promis'd him attention and obedience, and thereupon he thus began:

Although you have of late given me some Testimonies of your love and obedience, and thereby won me to a good opinion of you, yet know, till that of late I had an ill opinion of you, and that not without cause, especially to the outward appearance, and indeed I must needs tell you, I was troubled with that disease which the world calls jealousie, but your late good carriage hath cur'd me of that distemper, and now I am dying, I give you free leave to marry, and conjure you so to do with all decent conveniency; but above all things, I only beg you not to be married to *T. K.* who of all your Company-keepers I had most suspition of, and therefore have most cause to hate.

This is that which I desire of you, and which I hope you will as you have promis'd me obey me, in: The good woman seeing that her Husband had finished his discourse, thus replied;

Truly Husband you may, and I hope will rest satisfied that I will obey you, when I shall tell you that I must not, will not, nor cannot be married to the man you name; for I'le assure you I am so far from doing so, that I am already determined to have another,

ther, and indeed, to ſatisfie you farther, I'le aſſure you the Contract for marriage is already drawn and paſſed between us, and nothing is wanting to finiſh it but your death, and the Ceremony of the Church. The poor old man hearing her give this anſwer, was ſo troubled at the thought of it, that being almoſt dead already, this quite kill'd him, whereby ſhe had the means to put her Deſign in Execution.

Thus, ſaid I, have I finiſhed my diſcourſe, and as it much reſembles your *S*tory, ſo I believe your Lady was of the ſame mind as my woman, although ſhe had ſo much diſcretion as to conceal it from all the world; but, continued I, your ſtory is very pleaſant, it being ſuch an expedient to get an Heir, and thereby get an Eſtate, as I have not heard of, and indeed the young Gentleman did deſerve to have ſomewhat conſiderable for the uſe of his Lady; for I conclude her his ever ſince he had took the pains to court her and gain her affections, and promiſe of marriage, and although his Eſtate was not equal to hers, yet together their Eſtates would have been ſo conſiderable as might have afforded them a ſufficient maintenance; but now it fell out better, ſhe not being much damag'd, he much improv'd by travel, and their Eſtate now being a very plentiful one. Indeed I wonder why friends ſhould hinder marriages when both parties are agreed, only for the deſerts of a little money, when as let them do what they can if either party march otherwiſe, their lives are commonly miſerable, and although Matches are upon that account ſometimes obſtructed, yet commonly in the end they take effect.

CHAP.

CHAp. VI.

A Widow that was wealthy reſolv'd to marry none but ſuch an one which ſhould enlarge her Eſtate, under that Pretence ſhe was cunningly out-witted by one dropping a Letter; ſhe is married to one not worth a groat, inſtead of a Joynter he gives her a Copy of Verſes. He afterwards grows jealous, the ſad effects of Jealouſie, and a ſtrange Story thereupon.

HAving finiſhed my diſcourſe, it was well approved of, but ſaid Miſtreſs *Dorothy* oftentimes the one party being covetous, and marrying only out of hopes of a good eſtate, is out-witted and deceived by the other, and ſince, ſaid ſhe, we are entred upon the diſcourſe of marriage, I will give you an account of one who was over-reached in that manner.

There lived a woman of my acquaintance who having been once married, and her Husband dead, was reſolved to have an other, but withal, ſhe was reſolv'd that ſhe would have ſuch an one that ſhould enlarge her Eſtate, which although it was conſiderable enough, yet ſhe intended now to have ſuch a Husband as ſhould bring an Eſtate equal to, if not exceeding her own. Her former marriage had been when ſhe was very young, and then it was for love, and that Love being dead, ſhe intended to bury all fond love with him, becauſe ſhe had bin ſo eaſily courted, and won by her firſt Husband, ſeveral others put her in to be ſecond; but, as ſhe ſaid, having tryed the effects of love, and finding that it had been likely

likely to have made her miſerable, ſhe purpos'd to have no more of that, but intended now to have ſuch a man as ſhe did not hate; one accompliſh'd, and likely enough to do a womans buſineſs, but all this would not do unleſs he were rich; and being thus reſolv'd, ſhe turned off all Suiters that came to her, that ſhe did not know were thus accompliſhed.

At length came a Gentleman that was a very likely man to the outward appearance, and he profeſſed he had a hundred pounds *per annum*, and it may be more: Thoſe friends that introduced him into her acquaintance, told her that he was a plain upright honeſt man, and that whatever he ſaid or ſhould ſay of himſelf ſhe might believe, and withal that they knew that his Eſtate was worth three hundred pounds *per annum*, he having ſpoken ſo modeſtly of himſelf as a hundred pounds *per annum* and his and her friends telling her of three hundred *per annum*; ſhe knew not what to think of it, or which to believe, ſometimes ſhe was of the opinion that he might have the three hundred pounds *per annum* her friends talked of, and only out of modeſty, and to try her temper, ſpake but of one hundred pounds himſelf, becauſe he intended after marriage to be the better eſteem'd by her, becauſe things proved better than ſhe expected; and at other times ſhe did not know but that he might be an Impoſter, and it may be had little or nothing, and that all this was but a Trick to catch and over-reach her, wherefore ſhe was reſolv'd to proceed with all caution.

He being deſirous to put an end to his court ſhip and finiſh all by matrimony, asked her when the day ſhould be wherein they ſhould be joyned? ſhe told

him

him that ſhe was not in haſte, and that it was fit before marriage, to make ſome proviſion and settlement of Eſtate, as that afterwards there might not be any cauſe to repent, and therefore if he would ſay, what part of his Eſtate he would ſettle and enſure on her, and conclude that, the marriage might ſoon be concluded on.

To this he preſently anſwered, that his Eſtate was a hundred pounds *per annum*, and ſomewhat more, now he would put her to her choice, whether ſhe would have the hundred pound *per annum* ſettled on her, or leave the buſineſs to his own free will and appointment, telling her that he queſtioned not but ſhe would deſerve will of him, and that then it would be to her advantage, not to have any certain Settlement.

To this propoſition ſhe knew not what to anſwer, but being covetous told him that ſhe would for two or three days conſider of it; he was content, and ſo they parted. The next day he took occaſion to viſit her again, and pulling ſomewhat haſtily out of his pocket, he dropt a Letter which he did not miſs, but going out of the Room left the letter behind him. This Lady ſeeing it fall, took it up, and ſeeing that by the Superſcription it was directed to him, and being very deſirous to know ſomewhat of his affairs, ſhe was reſolv'd to keep and peruſe it: wherefore he ſoon after leaving the houſe, and ſhe being retired, and having opened the Letter found theſe Lines:

Sir,

AFter due Reſpects to you, theſe are to acquaint you that although we have had the misfortune of

your

your long abſence, yet your affairs have hitherto fallen out fortunate enough, and are likely ſtill to continue ſo, for of the laſt half years Rent due to you, I have gathered in two hundred pounds, which you know is the whole within a ſmall matter, and there is three hundred pounds more fallen upon you by an accident which you may receive at your firſt arrival; for S. L. *your old Tenant in your Copy-hold and his Wife are both dead, and their Son hath offered two hundred pounds for a new Leaſe, renewed in his and his brothers Names, beſides an addition of twenty pounds* per annum *Rent more than formerly, and a hundred pounds more is offered by Goodman* L. *to put in his Sons Life into his Leaſe, ſo that I am much importuned to diſpatch them, If you pleaſe to perform theſe two Leaſes (as in my opinion you may) they are ſo deſirous of their Bargains that they will pay down the money to me, and take my promiſe that you will at your return ſeal to them, ſo that if you pleaſe to accept it I will ſend up the whole ſum, five hundred pounds together, it being more ſafe and profitable for you to diſpoſe it at* London *than here.*

And now having done with your buſineſs, I beſeech you pardon me, if I deſire to know whether, and how you proceed in your Love Sute, for the Widow R. *who you had ſome affection for her, is deſirous that you would renew your Suit, and ſhe is in ſome better capacity as to her Eſtate than formerly, for an Unkle lately dead, hath left her five hundred pounds: but Sir, I knowing that you do not eſteem money equal to affection*

muſt

him that ſhe was not in haſte, and that it was fit before marriage, to make ſome proviſion and settlement of Eſtate, as that afterwards there might not be any cauſe to repent, and therefore if he would ſay, what part of his Eſtate he would ſettle and enſure on her, and conclude that, the marriage might ſoon be concluded on.

To this he preſently anſwered, that his Eſtate was a hundred pounds *per annum*, and ſomewhat more, now he would put her to her choice, whether ſhe would have the hundred pound *per annum* ſettled on her, or leave the buſineſs to his own free will and appointment, telling her that he queſtioned not but ſhe would deſerve will of him, and that then it would be to her advantage, not to have any certain Settlement.

To this propoſition ſhe knew not what to anſwer, but being covetous told him that ſhe would for two or three days conſider of it; he was content, and ſo they parted. The next day he took occaſion to viſit her again, and pulling ſomewhat haſtily out of his pocket, he dropt a Letter which he did not miſs, but going out of the Room left the letter behind him. This Lady ſeeing it fall, took it up, and ſeeing that by the Superſcription it was directed to him, and being very deſirous to know ſomewhat of his affairs, ſhe was reſolv'd to keep and peruſe it: wherefore he ſoon after leaving the houſe, and ſhe being retired, and having opened the Letter found theſe Lines:

Sir,

AFter due Reſpects to you, theſe are to acquaint you that although we have had the misfortune of

your

your long abſence, yet your affairs have hitherto fallen out fortunate enough, and are likely ſtill to continue ſo, for of the laſt half years Rent due to you, I have gathered in two hundred pounds, which you know is the whole within a ſmall matter, and there is three hundred pounds more fallen upon you by an accident which you may receive at your firſt arrival; for S. L. *your old Tenant in your Copy-hold and his Wife are both dead, and their Son hath offered two hundred pounds for a new Leaſe, renewed in his and his brothers Names, beſides an addition of twenty pounds* per annum *Rent more than formerly, and a hundred pounds more is offered by Goodman* L. *to put in his Sons Life into his Leaſe, ſo that I am much importuned to diſpatch them, If you pleaſe to perform theſe two Leaſes (as in my opinion you may) they are ſo deſirous of their Bargains that they will pay down the money to me, and take my promiſe that you will at your return ſeal to them, ſo that if you pleaſe to accept it I will ſend up the whole ſum, five hundred pounds together, it being more ſafe and profitable for you to diſpoſe it at* London *than here.*

And now having done with your buſineſs, I beſeech you pardon me, if I deſire to know whether, and how you proceed in your Love Sute, for the Widow R. *who you had ſome affection for her, is deſirous that you would renew your Suit, and ſhe is in ſome better capacity as to her Eſtate than formerly, for an Unkle lately dead, hath left her five hundred pounds: but Sir, I knowing that you do not eſteem money equal to affection*

muſt

muſt be ſilent, and leave all to your own diſcretion; Thus deſiring your Worſhips Pardon for this boldneſs, I reſt

Your Worſhips Servant
and Steward,
L. T.

Our covetous Widow having greedily read over this Letter, was hugely pleas'd with the Contents thereof, and hugg'd her ſelf for the good Fortune ſhe was likely to have; for now ſhe reſolved that her Sweet-heart had near five hundred pound *per annum*, beſides five hundred pounds ready mony in his Purſe that ſhe knew of, but the latter end of the Letter did not at all pleaſe her, wherein the Steward was ſo bold as to put him in minde of his old Love, and ſhe was very fearful that the five hundred pounds additional Eſtate that ſhe had, might incline him to renew his Suit; wherefore all theſe matters being conſidered, ſhe was reſolv'd to delay or protract the buſineſs no longer, but upon his next deſires of marriage, to accept of it, and that upon his own terms.

Wherefore two or three days being paſt over, wherein ſhe had promis'd to conſider of it, and he again deſiring her Anſwer, and withal telling her that his occaſions called him into the Countrey, ſhe therefore tells him that ſhe was ſo far perſwaded of his Love and Honeſty, that ſhe was ready to be married to him ſo ſoon as he pleased, and that without any terms leaving it to his own diſpoſing, not doubting but as ſhe had generouſly caſt her ſelf upon him, ſo that he would be as generous in his providence for her; he replyed that ſhe ſhould command all he had,

and

and then by her conſent ordering the Wedding Solemnities, they were within three days married. She hoping that by her freeneſs with him, he would be civil to her, gave him the Keys, and thereby the poſſeſſion of all her Money, Plate, and writings, and he taking ſo much as he had preſent occaſion for, returned the Keys to her again.

And thus they ſtrived to out-do one another in kindneſs; but ſome weeks being paſt, and he not at all ſpeaking of his Countrey affairs, ſhe put him in mind of them, telling him that it would be couvenient for him to viſit his houſe in the Countrey, and that if he pleaſ'd ſhe would accompany him in the Countrey, and withal adding, that ſhe hoped he would be as good as his word, and make her a conſiderable Joynture; he reply'd that ſhe had ſo well pleas'd him, that he would make her a Joynture of all he had, ſhe believing that it was as conſiderable as the Letter expreſs'd, gave him many thanks; and thus he fed her with good words, but ſtill delay'd his Journey, and put her off with ſome odd pretence or other, but ſhe at laſt becoming importunate with him for her Joyntnre, he told her that he was ſo well skill'd in Law, that he would draw a Draught of it himſelf, and give it her to adviſe with her friends, ſhe was now well enough content, only ſhe ſtill put him in mind of the Draught of the Joynture; he told herhe was about it, and had almoſt finiſhed it, and one day told her that now it was done, and that he alſo had occaſion to take a Journey for three days, and in that time ſhe might confer with her friends about the Draught he would leave her; ſhe was very well content, and he taking money in his Pocket went his journey; when ſhe

tak-

taking the Paper he had left, and believing it to be the draught of her Joynture, went to some of her neareſt Relations to confer with, and have their advice about it, but they opening the Paper, inſtead of the expected draught of a Joynture, they found theſe Lines:

Grave plodding Sirs, my Wife I've ſent to you,
That you'le adviſe her what ſhe'd had beſt to do;
She's rich and ſo am I, beyond controul,
For I have Lordſhips boundleſs as my ſoul;
She's vaſtly rich what need ſhe covet more?
Yet gaining me, ſhe's richer than before;
I have no Lands, confeſt, but I have wit,
Make her ſuch Joynture as you pleaſe of it;
I have good parts too, that ſhe knows full well,
And may confeſs, if not aſham'd to tell;
Both which ſhe ſhall command nor will I be
Unkind to her that was thus kind to me;
What would ſhe more? having enough of Pelf,
Sh'hath all ſhe could have, ſince ſhe hath my ſelf:
Dear-ſecond-ſelf, be not diſpleas'd, that I
Have fram'd a Letter to gain thee thereby:
Who would not rack his wits to ſpring a Myne
So rich? all other's poor compar'd to thine;
Now here the Powers above henceforth decree,
That none may work within that Mine but me.

The Gentleman returning, found his wife in ſo pleaſant and *debonair* a temper, that he thought ſhe had complotted with her friends ſome ſatisfactory revenge that might be equivalent to the ſtratagems he had laid to gain a wealthy Widow, with the ſubtle

pre

pretences of a fair promiſing fortune. But having diſcourſt her to every thing, and penetrating the very receſſes of her heart, found ſhe was more ſatisfied with his wit in this cunning contrivance, than if he had the real enjoyment of what he ſo largely pretended; and now ſhe hugg'd his ſoul with much more ardency than her feeble hands could do his body: great was the ſatisfaction on both ſides, but much greater was the Gentlewomans, finding an Husband anſwerable to her deſires, beyond all expectations; neither was the Gentleman backward in making ample acknowledgements how happy he was in that his propitious ſtars had by their clear ſhining influence lighted him to ſo fair a wife, with ſo large a Fortune: The Friends and Relations of this joyful Bride were all very well-contented by being out-witted by a Gentleman every way compleat both as to Soul and Body, each wiſhing it had been their lucky hap to have had a Son in Law of ſo worthy a perſon.

For a conſiderable time they nothing but treated one another, which was done on all ſides with ſo much Gallantry and generous freedom, as ſufficiently demonſtrated the greatneſs of the reſpects and friendſhip they had for one another. The new married Couple were like a pair of Turtles, always wooing and courting each other, with ſo much ardency of affection, that they were look'd upon by all, as the beſt Pattern of a kind Husband and a loving Wife. After this manner they lived ſome years, and obtained the fruit of all their enjoyments, by having ſeveral Children Males and Females: But as it is uſually and philoſophically ſaid that what is violent is ſeldom permanent, ſo it prov'd true in our two Lovers; for

though their was no ſimilitude in the loves of others to theirs, yet length of time made their loves ſo diſſimular to each other by an unhappy accident, that we have ſcarcely heard of an Example of the like kind, who produced a more diſmal and lamentable Tragedy.

This Gentlewoman as I have informed you, was an extraordinary Beauty, very handſome, and of a winning carriage, very familiar where ſhe obſerved any thing of merit or deſert; only to be blamed for a ſmall matter of Avarice, which had ever ran in the veins of her Anceſtors; but principally to be admired for her modeſt deportment and chaſte diſpoſition. In her minority when the ſweet Roſe-bud, her virginity was ſcarce blown, ſhe had a vaſt quantity of Suiters, which dayly ſollicited her Parents to give their conſent that they might addreſs themſelves to the Daughter by the way of marriage, ſome of the more wealthy ſort were permitted, others for want of a Fortune ſuitable to hers, were denied, but ſhe for her part lookt upon them all with ſo much indifferency, that ſhe gave none an occaſion to boaſt of her extraordinary favours.

Whilſt her amorous Viſitants were deſpairing by reaſon of her extream coldneſs, a young and ſprightly Gentleman hearing of her incomparable beauty, and rare accompliſhments crowded in among the reſt of her Adorers, and at firſt ſight concluded what he ſaw, to out-ſtrip what ever he had taken upon report, and fell paſſionately in love with her, and having not other Rhetorique but his eyes, he employed them ſo effectually, that they ſpake more in his behalf, than if he had had the advantage of a ſcore of eloquent tongues to have pleaded his Cauſe; the warm-

warming Rays of theſe two little glittering Orbs thaw'd her affection with as much facility as the melting Sun diſſolves an hoary froſt criſping the Pearly-dew'd graſs in a *May*-morning. Thus at the firſt interview there was a reciprocal return of each others affections, but though their was a ſuitableneſs in their wills, yet there was a deſparity in their Fortunes, which cauſed her friends to be utterly againſt any overture that ſhould be made as to a Match with this young Gentleman and their Daughter, and leſt there ſhould be any private conference between them which might more ſtrongly cement their affections, they reſolved to prevent all things of that nature by ſending her to a place not only remote, but altogether unknown to any but themſelves.

What an heart-breaking this was to our two Lovers I will give you leave to imagine; for a time it was almoſt intolerable, but Abſence the beſt remedy for a Love-ſick heart cured her in ſome part; and hearing that her friend's diſcontent had forced him to travel with a reſolution never to return, (ſhe being call'd home to her fathers houſe) was induced to permit the viſits of her Amoriſts as before; and now ſeeing her ſelf incapable of holding out longer, by reaſon of the perſwaſion of her Parents, and inceſſant importunities of her Lover, yields to him, and ſo they were married, with whom ſhe lived very happily; but her Husband dying, ſhe lived a while a widow, in hope to hear from her firſt Lover, which ever makes the deepeſt impreſſion on the amorous heart, but being aſſur'd by ſeveral credible perſons (as ſhe thought) that he was dead, ſhe bathing his memory with ſome tears, reſolved when opportunity ſhould fair and ad-

vantagiouſly offer it ſelf, ſhe would throw off her Widow-hood and re-aſſume her former condition. To this purpoſe ſeveral addreſſed themſelves to her, but ſhe being a politick and crafty woman, gave ear to them all, but gave credit to none. And indeed for my part I cannot but applaud her prudence in not too haſtily marrying after the deceaſe of her Husband, if it were for nothing elſe than the dayly treats a woman ſhall meet withal in that condition, if ſhe be handſome; if wealthy, how will the preſents come tumbling hourly into her lap? Not a beauty hunter in the Town but will endeavour to have a flurt at the Widow, and not a younger brother or decay'd Gallant but will try to ſawder up his crack'd Fortunes, though he ſpend his whole Revenue on her, that is, either what he hath about him, or what he can borrow upon a thouſand Oaths and Proteſtations. But to return where I left off, this Widow admitted ſeveral to careſs her, whom ſhe entertained handſomely befitting their quality; among the reſt this laſt (indigent) Gentleman accoſted her, the greatneſs of whoſe affections with the pretence of a great Eſtate, carried her from all the reſt; happily they lived ſome conſiderable time, and longer they might have ſo done, had not this Gentlewomans firſt Lover returned, who did ſo upon no other account than that he heard his dearly beloved Miſtreſs was in a condition to receive him into her boſom, and ſo make him amends for all the ſorrow and trouble he had ſuſtained for her ſake; but finding his expectations fruſtrated, he behaved himſelf like a man diſtracted, eſpecially when he had heard from her own mouth, had he been preſent, of all the men in the world ſhe would have choſe

ſen him for her Husband. This indeared expreſſion as it would at another time have tranſported him into an Extaſie of Joy, ſo now it wrought contrary effects upon him, for to think by his raſh and inconſiderate abſenting himſelf he had loſt that ineſtimate prize he might have enjoy'd by waiting near it with patience. His madneſs encreas'd to that height, he took his Bed and fell into a deſperate Fever; his Miſtreſs hearing in what a ſad condition this poor Gentleman lay for her ſake, could do no leſs than give him a viſit to comfort him, and reduce him if it were poſſible to his former underſtanding, for he raved night and day, continually calling on her name, exclaiming againſt her cruelty, and I know not what.

The ravings of this Gentleman were bruited every where ſome pitying him, whilſt they cunningly pryed into the cauſe of his diſtemper, and by reaſon he was a perſon well known to moſt of the inhabitants, old ſtories were rapt up, and all concluded the deplorableneſs of his preſent ſtate proceeded from this Gentlewoman.

Her Husband was not ſo deaf, but that he heard all theſe mutterings, which extreamly diſturb'd his ſpirits, inſomuch that he now began to queſtion in his thoughts his Wifes fidelity to him, but expreſt not his reſentments in the leaſt, reſolving to ſee what the event of theſe things would be. The Gentlewoman on the other ſide fearing leſt ſhe ſhould be the death of him ſhe once loved equally with her own life, reſolved to reſtore him if ſhe could, and to that intent ſhe judg'd the beſt expedient was to remove his deſpair, by giving him ſome hopes that he had a ſhare in that heart ſtill which was once totally his;

which ſhe did with ſo much aſſurance (though with no ſuch intent) that he had not ſo loſt his ſenſes but that he underſtood what ſhe ſaid, and therefore begg'd a repetition of theſe words again, which ſhe did ſo ſweetly and with ſo much ſeeming reality, that this remedy had like to have proved his abſolute ruine, for at this he cryed out as loud as his weakned ſpirits would give leave, O let me die! ſince none more happy now than I, and ſo fell into a ſwound; there were none in the Room but theſe two, but the Gentlewoman with her ſhrieks ſoon fill'd the Room, who aſſiſted all to recal him, with much difficulty they did, and now there greateſt care was to get him to ſleep; he was now eaſily perſwaded to any thing, to all their admirations, and ſo repoſing himſelf that night, there was by the next morning wrought ſo wonderful a change that all his friends were amazed. This miraculous recovery plainly appeared to proceed from his Doctreſs for after this there was not a viſit that ſhe gave him, which did not ſenſibly amend him.

At length he was reſtored to his perfect health, and now did this Gentlewomans Husband fall ſick of a worſe diſtemper, the *Plague of Jealouſie*, and raved as the other had done, but in a worſe manner; for now he did not ſtick to call that wife (which he knew with all her Friends to be honeſt and virtuous) Whore, Strumpet, *&c.* It was to no purpoſe to for her juſtify her innocency, for he was ſo ſtrongly poſſeſt with an opinion of her diſhoneſty, that he would not hear the leaſt Plea in her behalf, but ſo enrag'd he was that nothing proceeded out of his mouth but vows to be revenged on his Wife and looſe Aſſociate; ſeveral attempts he made on them both, but ineffectual; inſomuch

ſomuch that it was now high time for their friends to adviſe them not to come near him, till ſome means might be uſed to convince him of his misbelief, and to lay open the danger that would enſue ſhould he perſiſt in this misgrounded opinion.

This counſel was well receiv'd and followed, this Jealous Gentleman being thus deſerted, and the Subjects of his revenge removed from him, ran up and down like a mad-man, but ſeeing at laſt this could not be the way to effect his purpoſe, deſiſted from raving, and ſeemed to hearken to the counſel of his friends who adviſed by all means to harbour no ſuch unworthy thought of his wife, pawning their ſouls ſhe was as honeſt as their own, with many more perſwaſions, which he hearkned to with great attention ſeemingly, and to be ſhort, acknowledg'd his error; and if that they would be the inſtruments of bringing his wife to him again, he would on his knees beg her forgiveneſs, and the Gentleman whom he had wrong'd, they making him bind his promiſe with many Vows and Proteſtations, aſſured him they would uſe their utmoſt endeavour, in ſhort time they prevailed with the Gentlewoman to return upon the Conditions aforeſaid.

Coming home, this hypocritical jealous Devil prepared a ſumptuous Dinner, and invited his ſuppoſed Rival, with many friends to rejoyce with him in this happy reconciliation between him and his wife, and in the mean time he applied himſelf to an Apothecary, an intimate friend of his, whom he thought wicked enough for his purpoſe, and one that he might confidently truſt, telling him that his wife was a Whore, and that he knew the Rogue her la-

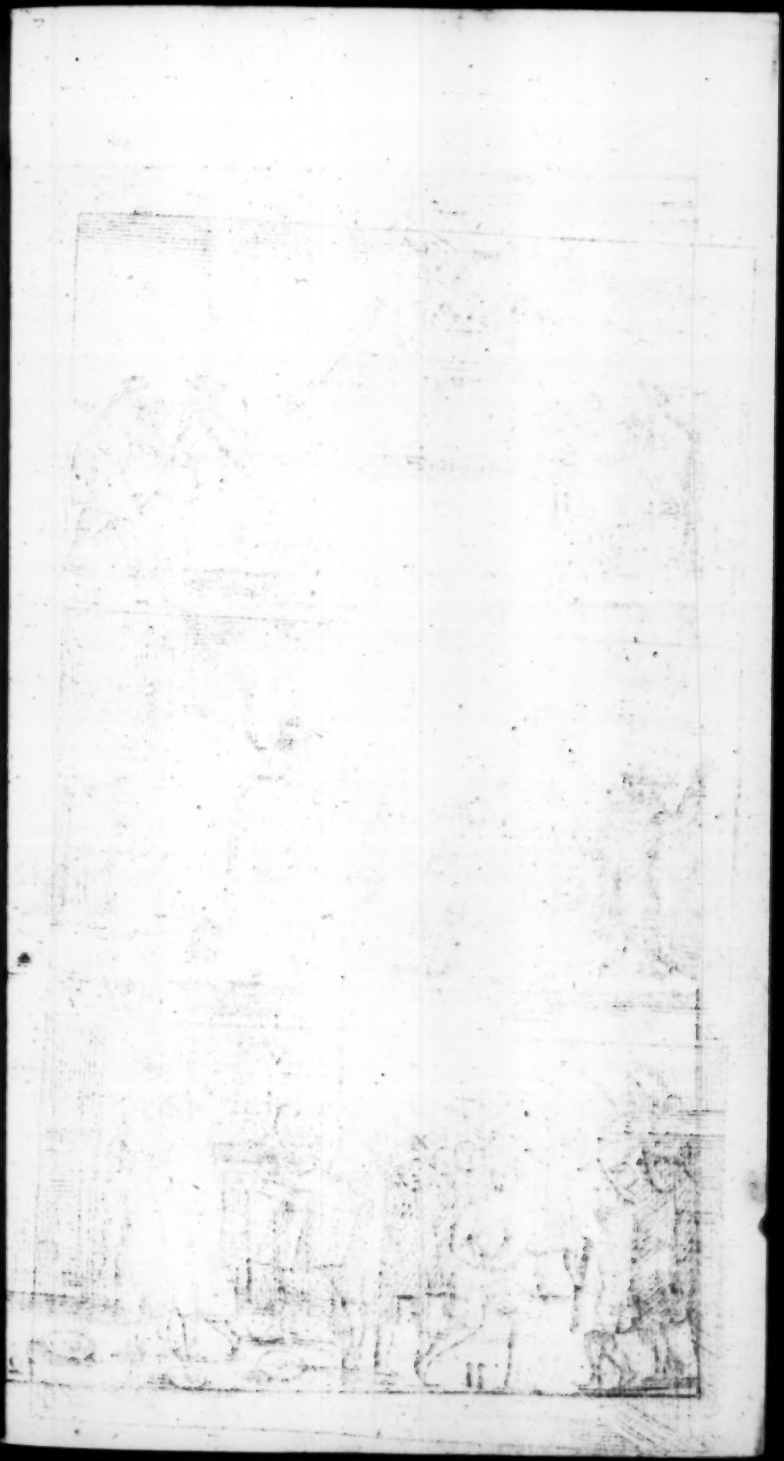
ſcivious Paramour; that he was a dead man if he was not revenged on them both by death, and for that purpoſe he muſt help him to a ſtrong doſe of poyſon that ſhall diſpatch them inſtantly; the Apothecary after ſome pauſes, with the proviſo of never being diſcovered, conſented, and gave him ſomething in a paper, with which much joy he received, and carried home with all expedition. By this time dinner was ready and ſerv'd up, the Gueſts ſeated, and he bidding them welcome with a chearful countenance, declar'd to the whole Company that he had highly wrong'd his wife, and that Gentleman pointing to him, that if they would forgive him, he would make them amends; they readily condeſcended to what he had propounded, and now nothing but a general jollity was obſerved throughout the Table, the Glaſſes went about merrily, there being all ſorts of wine to exceſs; and now let me bring this feaſt to its Cataſtrophe. The Cloth being removed, and all prepared and ready for a Grace-cup, this graceleſs man, the Maſter of the Feaſt, call'd for a Bottle of Wine, in which before he had conveyed what he had received from the Apothecary, and filling out thereof in a large glaſs up to the brimm, drank an health to his wife, wiſhing they might never have more difference here, his Wife and all the Company gladly accepted the motion; he having drank it off filled to his wife, which ſhe drank off to her former Lover, he receives it, and drank, as the other had done, to the next having ſo done, the Husband ſtarted up, ſaying, It was enough, it ſhould go no further; every one admired at the humour, which he perceiving, ſaid, you muſt think I love my wife and her friends better than

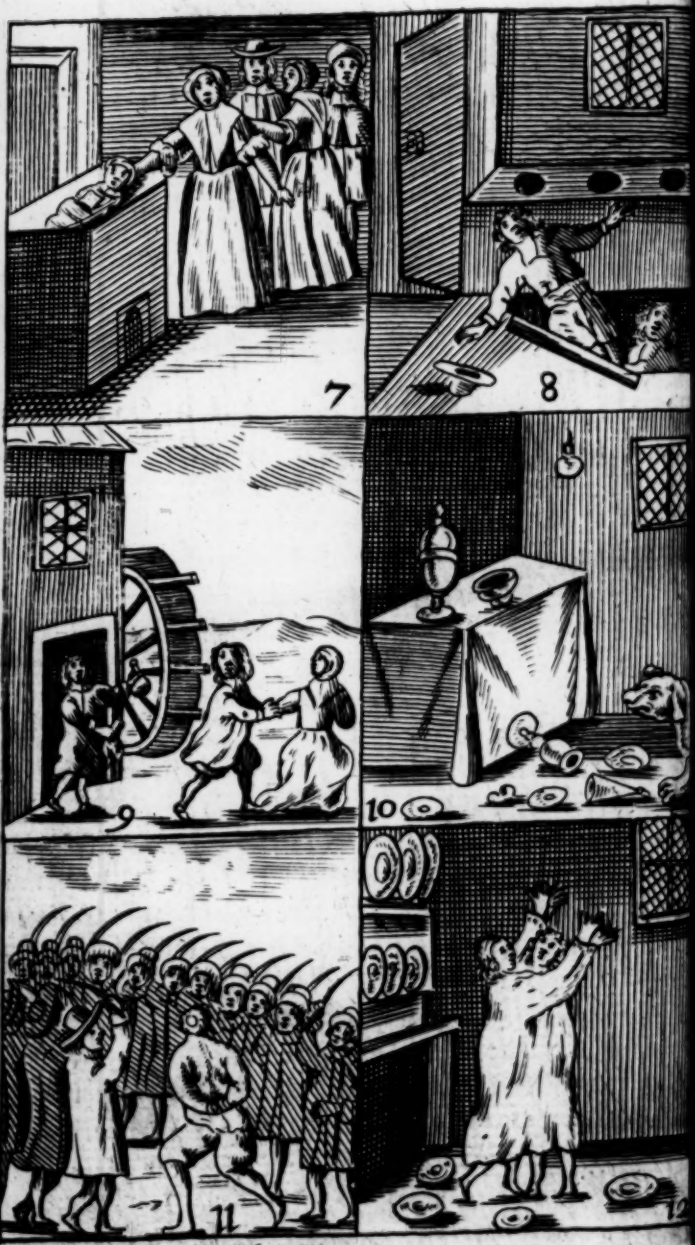
ſo, than that they ſhould drink what you do, they deſerve to have ſomething therein better than ordinary to end all differences on Earth, and make them Saints in Heaven, I love them not ſo ill as not to bear them company; Come, come to your prayers for a proſperous journey, our time is but ſhort. Lord! what a confuſion was all the room in, when they heard him ſpeak after this manner, knowing now that he had perfected his revenge by poyſoning them and himſelf too. Several were diſpatcht inſtantly for Antidote to expel the poyſon, whilſt the poor Gentlewoman and her friend were on their knees offering up their laſt Petitions: having ſaid ſome Prayers, Husband, ſaid ſhe, I forgive you with all my Soul, but know, I ever lov'd you too well to defile your Bed, and as theſe are (as I ſuppoſe) the laſt words I ſhall ever ſpeak to you more, I am innocent as to what you unjuſtly ſuſpect me with; and let me, ſaid her friend, on the dying words of a ſinful man proteſt, I never defiled your Bed, and do believe her from all others as chaſte as the chaſteſt Veſtal-virgin; whilſt they were thus confeſſing, the Apothecary came in juſt as the Husband had kneeled to ask Heaven forgivenneſs for this tripple murder. The Apothecary ſeeing them all in this poſture, he broke out into a very extravagant laughter, which made the Husband turn about his head, who ſeeing the Apothecary, cryed out, Seize that Villain, it is he that hath help'd me to do this damn'd Act, it is he that hath furniſhed me with thoſe helliſh materials to murder the innocent; by this time conceit had ſo wrought on the other two, that by their faces it was high time the Apothecary ſaw to unriddle the whole matter; where-

wherefore deſiring them to riſe, Gentlemen, ſaid he, the Maſter of this houſe upon a diſcontent grounded on jealouſie, the particulars whereof you all know, came to me, and deſired aſſiſtance in his revenge by poyſon, had I deny'd him he would have gone to ſome elſe, who might have embraced his wicked deſign, but to the intent I might hinder all further attempts, I gave him nothing but what was harmleſs, and aſſure your ſelves there is no danger in what you have drank, my life for yours; this ſtrangely amaz'd them all, the Gentlewoman was demanded how ſhe felt her ſelf, ſhe acknowledged to have no ſenſe of alteration, and ſo did the other; the Husband ſeeing how fouly his Plot was diſcovered, and being aſham'd to breath after ſo much intentional guilt, drew a Dagger and attempted to ſtabb himſelf three or four times, but was ſtill prevented, being at laſt ſomewhat pacified by his good wife, he retired, and having for two years ſequeſtred himſelf from the enjoyments of the world, exerciſing himſelf in all things that became a penitent man, he vowed a weekly pennance during his life, and ſo was throwly reconciled to his wife, and the moderate enjoyments of this life.

And thus Miſtreſs *Dorothy* finiſhed all her Stories acquainting us further, that amongſt theſe many Amoriſts that came ro ſee her, her friend the Scrivener, became intimately acquainted with her, and frqeuenting her Company often, gained ſo great an Intereſt in her, that he being bound for the *Eaſt-Indies*, perſwaded her to go with him in mans apparel, which ſhe did, and there found ſome of her old acquaintance, and one that had been to familiar with her before in *England*. Every one had now given an ac-

count




7
8
9
10
11
12

count of the moſt conſiderable paſſages of their lives, excepting only the Captain, who being ſollicited thereunto, freely condeſcended to anotamize his life, without mincing the leaſt material truth, and thus in the Chapters following gives you the whole relation.

CHAP VII.

The Sea-Captain gives an account of his illegitimate Birth at Briſtol, *was left on a Stall, and maintained by the Pariſh. He is deluded by a Bawd, and perſwaded to Steal; he is taken* ipſo facto, *committed, arraigned, and condemned to be tranſported; the Bawd is Carted.*

IT's now high time for me to acknowledge the great Satisfaction I have received in your relating ſo many witty and pleaſant paſſages, that have occurr'd in your lives time hitherto; nor can I (without injuring your ingenuity) but commend your generous freedom in diſcourſing every Remarque, and not omitting any obſervable, though you knew it could not chuſe but cut the very throat of your dying Reputations; and that I may not ſeem to fall ſhort of that frankneſs, and gallantry, I will not ſo much as ſeem tainted of the late unpardonable ſin of theſe times; Men making it generally their buſineſs to cenſure the Lives and Actions of others, without being in the leaſt ſenſible of their own, or amending thoſe they cannot hide. Wherefore I ſhall not abate my ſelf an Ace, nor ſhall I let a Vice eſcape, (whereof I am and hath been plentifully ſtored) without letting you take notice

tice of its ſhape, complexion, and conſtitution; Nor ſhall I hide this truth from you, that I came into the world by ſtealth, being begot in *Hugger-mugger*. As my Parents begot me raſhly, ſo they left me careleſly to the world, not doubting, but that which was gotten with ſo much heat, would live in ſpight of Fate. They were the more reſolute in this cruel reſolution of leaving me on a Stall, having generally obſerved the good Fortune that generally attends Baſtards. I was not long left on the Stall, (as my Nurſe hath ſeveral times ſince informed me,) but that Hunger awakening me, I piped ſo ſhrilly, (and ſo unexpectedly lowd from a Child ſo young,) that I ſoon penetrated the ears of a great many pitiful minded perſons that were paſſing by that way: but the greateſt number were of the Female Sex. The Maids, you may think had fine tittering ſport; whilſt I poor Babby cryed for I knew not what, and well it had been if I never had known what it was to ſhed a Tear. At length a notable old Woman of the vulgar ſort, preſſing into the Crowd; *Stand aſide* (quoth ſhe) *ye gigg'letting Huzzies; get ye home to your Miſtreſſes ſervice; there is ſome of ye, for all your laughing now I warrant ye, will be putting finger in eye before theſe nine Months, upon the like account*, and ſo ſteps to me; *What* (ſaid ſhe) *the Child muſt not ſtarve, though it be a By blow; it's none of the poors infants fault*; and ſo opening her Breaſt, ſhe conducted her Nipple to my mouth, which immediately quieted my bawling. Various were the Diſcourſes and ſuppoſitions of the People, whoſe Child I ſhould be, every one giving in his verdict according to his imagination, or the ſuſpitions he had entertained of ſuch and ſuch;

Some

Some that were more curious and inquiſitive than the reſt, ſtrictly ſurvey'd me all over, and having commended me for a luſty Child (as generally ſuch are, who are begotten by the heat of blood and ſtrength, grown to full perfection) but likewiſe praiſed the proportion and promiſing features of my tender countenance. At laſt, a Paper ſome eſpy'd pinn'd to my breaſt, which my Nurſe preſerving, ſince I was of years, ſhe gave them me, and I committed them to my memory, which were theſe:

You ſee I'me pretty, and am cleanly clad;
Shew then more pity, than my Mother had.
But four days ſince, that I received breath;
O do not let me cry my ſelf to death.
Take home your Child, this Pariſh is my Mother;
And what's diſtreſſed in it is my Brother.
Keep me a while, for in ſome time don't fear,
I'le fully recompence your coſt and care.

Whilſt theſe were reading by a fellow, that thought himſelf not meanly ſo, becauſe he could read written hand; there was a general ſilence, but no ſooner had he ended, but there aroſe a greater tattling noiſe in the Crowd, than twenty Bike houſes, or a Fair in any Countrey town could produce. Saith one; *I warrant the Farher on't was no Fool, for doubtleſly he wrote the Verſes, but the Mother was without queſtion a cruel Quean, that could find in her heart to let ſo lovely a Babe to periſh by extremity of cold*; for it was then about *January*. The Conſtable was ſtraight way informed of this accident, who readily came, and cauſed me to be carryed to a Church-

war-

wardens: the Woman that was ſo tender-hearted as to ſuckle me, was glad of the imployment, hoping ſhe might be the Woman elected to be my Nurſe; which fell out accordingly, ſhe lately looſing her own Child of a quarter old. The good woman was overjoyed that ſhe had got another to ſupply the place of her own; eſpecially ſince ſhe ſuſpected that her age would not permit her to be aſſiſting in the getting of another, and therefore was the more tender of me; Her care and fondneſs made me grow apace, ſo that in 12 Months I was called her chopping Boy. To paſs over that age, wherein the underſtanding is in *Embrio*, and Reaſon and Experience have not yet conſulted about the governing of the grand concerns of mans future being; I ſhall only give you an account of my Life from the Ninth Year of my Age, till this preſent.

My Nurſe could not chooſe, when I was but Seven years old, but take notice of many things I committed, for which ſhe ſeverely chaſtis'd me, endeavouring to ſtop me in my firſt proceedings, knowing my pretty Rogueries had their riſe from an inclination to all manner of Vice. Above all things I loved all ſorts of ſtrong Liquors, not that any thing accounted pleaſurable, could go amiſs with me; for how could it otherwiſe be, ſince my Parents, (as I have been informed) ſtudied only how to enjoy their Heaven here, by enjoying what was moſt agreeable to ſence; and therefore I could not be unlike them, who was the abſolute extract of no common delights. I ſay I loved in an extraordinary meaſure, whatſoever was ſtrong, yet being too young, and ſo could not drink for the ſake of good company, I would gree-

greedily drink for its own ſake, and that I might procore my ſatisfaction that way, I found frequent opportunities to ſteal ſmall parcels out of my Nurſes Purſe when ſhe was aſleep, and then pretending that ſhe ſent me for Ale, would drink it by the way; Any ſmall trival thing, as a Knife, *&c.* in any Houſe whereever I came, I inſtantly ſeiz'd them as my properGoods andChattels,and converted them to the uſe aforeſaid: I had a very good convenience of a Bawdy-houſe not above a Muſquet ſhot from our Houſe; the well diſpoſed Matron thereof, would not only receive what I brought, but would give me half as much Ale as it was worth, beſides her bleſſing, (curſe be upon it, I never thriv'd ſince I had it,) the breath of her beſt wiſhes being enough to blaſt the moſt promiſing hopes, that ever yet aſpiring Youth entertain'd within his breaſt; Nay, ſhe told me I was her white Boy, inſtructed and encouraged me in the Art of theevery, telling me the welcomer I was, the oftner I came. Bythis means I began to know what it was to keep Company, her Wenches being my initiators, by whoſe help and my forward endeavours, I commenced Maſter of Art, before I could ſum up Twelve years; I ſoon became Profeſſor of that deep Myſtery, and could when occaſion ſerv'd not, ſwear mouthingly, (which others calls gracefully,) look impudently, talk impertinently, or imprudently, drink profoundly, and ſmoak everlaſtingly. I had got a trick to laugh at every thing, becauſe I would not be accounted moroſe, or phlegmatick; The melancholy man is a thing by it ſelf, differing from the whole creation; in which every individual *ſpecies* loves either an intercourſe in converſe, or amicable

Socie-

Society. That humour certainly was ſpawned by the Devil if it be true (as it is affirmed) that all Vices take their Original from Melancholy: on the contrary, what fault can he commit, whilſt he is laughing, and merry, that deſerves ſo much as the knitting of a Brow? Not that I will excuſe my ſelf; for my laughter was immoderate, and unſeaſonable, things ſo offenſively ridiculous to any wiſe man, (as I have conſidered ſince) that it were better to be deſtitute of a mouth, than that diſtorted Mouth ſhould abuſe the grateful off-ſpring of a cheerful heart.

I could not have gone to a fitter School than this, to learn Impudence, Lies, Oaths, Drunkenneſs, with all other Vices and Debaucheries, which commonly flow from ſuch like Nurſeries for Hell, Factors for the Devil. My frequent ramblings after this manner abroad, and in my returns, my jolly temper and jocular humour at home, made my Nurſe begin to ſuſpect me, calling me to an acconnt where I had been, with whom, and whether I had not tippled. I was grown ſo ſtout a Drunkard in ſo ſhort a time, that my tongue and feet made a firm contract never to betray me, and therefore to all her demands I had excuſes at my fingers ends: However ſhe could not but ſenſibly find a decreaſe in her ſmall ſtock; her chief livelihood depending on the ſale of Apples, Nuts, Ginger-bread, Eggs, and the like, and thought all her endeavours were blaſted from above: I ſaw her much troubled, and grieved, and I could not but be a little troubled, that I ſhould be the deſtruction of my preſerver; but as ſeldom any ſuch perplexing thoughts came into my head, ſo I was ever cautious how I entertained ſuch diſquietneſs. But Heaven de-

crde.d

creed, that I ſhould not be the ruine of this Woman, and therefore permitted me to go no longer on in my Roguery with her. For a little diſtance off our Houſe, I ſtept into a lower room in an Alehouſe, and ſeeing no body, I imagined the coaſt was clear. If I had ſeen any, I ſhould have askt ſome blind queſtion or other; for I was ſufficiently well acquainted, not only in that Pariſh, but through all *Briſtol*; that was the place of my Nativity: I ſay, ſeeing none, I catcht up a Beaker, thinking it was Silver, (but its new ſcouring deceived me) and clapt it into my Breeches, and ſo marcht off, as I thought undiſcovered, endeavouring with what ſpeed I could to repair to my old Rendezvouz. But he that obſerved me to ſteal the Beaker did now dog me to the Bawdy-houſe, which I had no ſooner entred, but I was groaping in my Breeches for my purchaſe, which when I had pull'd out, I tendred to my Landlady, deſiring her to be civil to me; *ne're queſtion* (quoth the fellow behind my back, that had watcht, and now catcht me) *you ſhal have as much civility as a whip will beſtow on your back; beſides what kindneſs lies in my power to do you.* Hearing him ſay ſo, I would have run a race with him, but I found him indiſpoſed, being out of breath before, and therefore held me faſt, deſiring one of thoſe that were crowding about the door to hear what was the matter, to go and fetch a Conſtable, which one more officious Raſcal than the reſt, preſently did; and the Conſtable taking me in cuſtody, and about to carry me before the Juſtice, (cryed) *Hold, good Mr. Conſtable, I pray, Sir, let me deſire you to put your ſelf to the trouble to view the Houſe farther; which by this grave Matrons leave, I queſtion not we ſhall find well*

furniſhed with variety of Goods which by her conſtant care, and the indefatigable pains of others ſhe hath gotten together. This fellow, with the Conſtable, and my own roguiſh Urchinſhip had no ſooner entred the Kitchin, but he eſpyed a Plate with the Letters of his name on't, which I had ſtoln about a fortnight before from him: which taking up in his hands, ſharply demanded of the good old Gentlewoman, how long it had been a ſojourner in her houſe, and by what means it came to ſtray ſo far from home? This antiquated piece of more than common impudence, did not ſtick to tell him that ſhe bought two dozen of them of ſuch a one, that lately broke up Houſe keeping. *Where are they*, quoth he? *before you on the ſhelf*, quoth ſhe, with as much ignorance, as confidence. Upon this, he made his eyes the diligent and ſpeedy Surveyors of that ſhelf on which the Plate ſtood, and of two dozen he found not two marked with one and the ſame Letters. *Why thou illiterate fool* (ſaid he) *I took thee till now to be an old crafty Devil-ridden Hag; the very Marks* (which are all ſeveral) *do ſufficiently evidence that each had his Maſter, before thou wert Miſtreſs of the four and twenty.* Hereupon he made a ſtrict Survey over the Utenſils of the Kitchen, and found moſt of them of the like nature. Some trivials whereof he knew to be his own, as Spoons, Porringers, Sawcers, and other ſmall things of light carriage, and eaſie conveyance, all which he ſeized and committed them to the cuſtody of the Conſtable. Then turning to me; *Come my little-pretty-raſcally thief* (quoth he) *as you have ſhewn your ſelf ingenuous, ſo ingeniouſly confeſs what things you have ſtollen from time to time, either from me or my Neighbourhood, and in ſo doing I will ſtand your friend*

friend, and endeavour to mitigate the ſeverity of your enſuing puniſhment.

I hearkned diligently to his flattering words, (for ſo I found them) but knew not what to reſolve on, thinking on the old Proverb, *Confeſs and be hang'd* made me as ſilent, as a *Turkiſh* Mute, or one born dumb. Which he perceiving and finding me timerous; *come, confeſs like a good Boy, ſaith he, otherwiſe it ſhall be the worſe for you.* Hearing him ſay ſo, I trembling looking ſtedfaſtly on him, to my great ſorrow could read in his angry countenance the manner and ſeverity of my puniſhment. Certainly had he at the time been arraigned upon ſuſpition of Murder, the Judge needed no other evidence than that of his monſtrouſly cruel looks. Never did Keeper of *New-gate* look half ſo frightingly on a re-taken Fellon, having broken Priſon, than he on me, and therefore without dallying with him further, I fell on my knees, and with as many ſalt tears, as ſweet words begging I is pardon, *I* informed him of every particular *I* could remember that had ſtollen from him; aſſuring him further, that it was not my own natural diſpoſition, but the inſtigation of that old Beldame (pointing to the Bawd) that induced me thereunto; encouraging me daily in this p lfering way, by receiving what *I* brought her, and making me drunk for it; and if *I* had not brought her a purchaſe once in two dayes, *I* had her menaces and threats; beſides her upbraiding me with ſloath and idleneſs, and calling me her good boy for nought. Mrs. Bawd had not the patience to hold her tongue longer, but too haſtily endeavouring to excuſe her ſelf, by accuſing me, her lying pretences had like to have choaked her by diſgorging them too

faſt, ſo that ſhe was forced to pawſe a while till ſhe had recovered a little breath, and wiped away the froth ſhe had ſo plentifully foamed at the mouth; preſently after ſhe opened in this manner; *Why you young Rogue! how dare you thus abuſe an honeſt Woman (though I ſay it) of my Calling? I am old enough to be your Grandmother, and therefore you might have reverenced my Age. Beſides I have paid Scot and Lot theſe two and thirty years where I live, and as well, or better acquainted with the Juſtice, than moſt of the Pariſh are with his Clerk; Sirrah it is well known what I am; a Mother of many Children in an honeſt calling, and never left them to be kept by the Pariſh, as your Mother did you, Whores-egg. I have had Knights and gallant Gentlemen in my Houſe early and late, and none of them ever yet could ſay black was mine eye. I have had as fine handſom Gentlewomen (and young too) as any in this City, that would not have dined with their friend without me, I thank them; and as they were my Lodgers, they had ſo great a reſpect for me, that they would not ſtir abroad, or hardly do any thing without my approbation, and ſuch was their eſteem of me, that I am venerably called their Mother by them, and others to this day.*

Well Mother, (then ſaid my Securer) *let us go to this Juſtice you are ſo well acquainted with; I doubt me, that knowledge you have of him will do you no great good; it would have been more your advantage if you had leſs known him.* And ſo without further delay he charging the Conſtable with us, and the Conſtable charging others to aid and aſſiſt him, my Grandame and I were both conveyed before the Juſtice, where upon examination I confeſſed all, not mincing

the

the truth in the leaſt, laying all the fault on the Bawd, who endeavoured to excuſe her ſelf, but to no purpoſe for the Juſtice told her he knew her too well, and was glad of this opportunity to put a period to her Bawdy reign; as I had confeſt my ſelf guilty of thoſe petty thefts, ſo *I* had my *mittimus* immediately drawn, and ſo had ſhe hers too, and the more deſervedly, by how much the Receiver is worſe than the Thief. We wanted not attendance (you may imagine) to the Gaol: the whole Street, and the next to that being raiſed in an inſtant to ſee a ſpectacle ſo prepoſterouſly diſagreeble. In the firſt place a thing ſo antiquated and old, that there was not one on Earth living that knew her age, neither could ſhe tell her ſelf, having outlived the knowledge thereof, and yet inſtead of minding her winding ſheet, ſhe would have ſtoln her own Coffin rather than lawfully buy it, had ſhe any way of a cleanly conveyance; nay, would have cheated the Sexton of a Burying-place, if her nails, which were long enough, had they been as ſtrong, could dig her own Grave. In the next place, a ſight to be lamented, one ſo young, that he had no ſooner skipt out of his Hanging ſleeves, but was gotten into the Highway, or ready road to be hang'd.

The Crowd and throng of People was ſo great about us, that the Conſtable made what ſpeed he could to Shop us, ſo that we were forced to march apace, a thing that would vex a Horſe to be on a Hand-Gallop to his own throat cutting. The Boys and Girls ſwarm'd about me, ſome calling me ſingly, Thief; others, theeving Baſtard; which unpleaſant ſounds did ſo often beat againſt the Drum of my ear,

that angers Heroick paſſion was quickly alarm'd, and did ſoon put it ſelf into a poſture of revenge. Though I knew my ſelf baſely born, yet I found my blood had the ſame heat and height of that of Princes; and though I was too ſenſible of the Guilt of their aſperſions, yet my lofty Spirit would not brook to be upbraided therewith; wherefore, if any with his reproaches came ſo near, as that I could reach him with my Fiſt, I would not there fail to ring him a Peal. I had daſht ſo many in the Face, Eyes, and Mouth, or wherever I could beſt ſtrike, that I engaged a young Army of Enemies againſt me, who in Front and Rear, nay, on each wing too, did ſo deſperately aſſault me, that had I had the hands of a ſcore of *Briariuſes*, they would have been to few, if no ſtronger than mine. The Conſtable at laſt was forc't to be my Champion, who ſo bravely defended me, as not to deprive me of my offending my numerous Foes.

You muſt not imagine that our good Matron went along more quietly than my ſelf, who, (while I was ſo diſadvantagiouſly fighting my way through) was pelted on all ſides with rotten Apples, Addle Egs, Dirt, or whatever was filthy or loathſom; ſo that by that time we got to the Gaol, ſhe was now fitter for a Peſt-houſe than a Priſon, having all thoſe ſtinking ingredients obout her, that are the common procurers of an univerſal Contagion. She no ſooner entred the Gate, but the Priſoners cryed out, fough, what have you brought hither? Do you think Want and Vermin will not kill us faſt enough, but you muſt thus poyſon us? Such Criminals as were ſo skilful as to know their own Fortunes, were in hopes that the ſtench of this woman would ſave the Judge the trou-

ble

ble of Condemning; and the Sheriff the labour of hanging them. Others who knew they ſhould not die that Seſſions of a ſuffocating Quinſy, laid preſently violent hands on her, and dragging her into the Yard, there Pumpt her ſweet and clean. The next work was to Hand-cuff us, and clap bolts between our Legs. My Godfathers (the Church-wardens of the Pariſh) hearing of their graceleſs God-childs confinement, came to viſit me, who were worſe than ever *Job*'s comforters were, for they only upbraided them of thoſe ſecret ſins which had thus publickly diſgraced him; but theſe told me, ſhame was too mild a puniſhment, and hanging was too good for me. In ſhort, that ſhould be my end, and wiſht I had ſaved the Pariſh from charges, by being hanged ſome years before. My Grandam hearing what a ſad ſentence my Ghoſtly-Fathers pronounced againſt me, and that I muſt inevitablygo to Pot concluded ſhe ſhouldbe Roaſt-meat to bear me Company at old *Nicks* table; for the People by her Diabolical looks were more than half perſuaded ſhe could not but be a Witch at leaſt.

Seſſions approaching I often meditated on the word, *Hanging*; but the word ſtruck ſo heavy on my Imagination, that it rather benummed than any ways quickned the ſence of puniſhment: Death I lookt on then with the ignorant and miſjudging eyes of a childiſh underſtanding, fancying that it was but the meer privation of Life, and there is an end, and not the ſeparation of Soul and Body for a while, till they be by the Infinity rejoyn'd, never to be ſeparated again, either in endleſs Joys, or Eternal Woes. But as often as I thought I ſhould be ſoundly whipt, or but have as many ſingle ſtripes, for every ſeveral Roguery I

committed, ſo often would the tears trickle from my eyes, whilſt my heart was ready to burſt, not having the benefit to diſcharge its grief.

Whilſt I was ruminating with my ſelf, what would become of me, my good Nurſe came to me, at whoſe ſight I was ready to diſſolve into Tears, neither was ſhe much behind hand with me, ſo that it was very difficult to judge who wept faſteſt. But at length recovering her ſelf, ſhe charged me home with all my miſcarriages, and thinking ſhe had made me fully ſenſible of them (which ſhe thought ſhe had done by my pitiful looks) ſhe then inſtructed me, how I ſhould behave my ſelf for the future, if I eſcaped this bout, and finally counſelling me that I ſhould freely confeſs my faults to the Judge, and then moſt penitently (with all ſubmiſſiveneſs) beg his Honour not only to pardon, but pity the tenderneſs of my Age. I con'd my Leſſon ſo well, that three days after, when I was carried to the Seſſions Houſe amongſt the reſt of the Priſoners, and being called to the Bar, I was bid hold up my Hand, and anſwer to guilty or not guilty, to what I ſtood Indicted? I anſwered guilty (*ſubmiſſa voce*) with ſo low a voice and ſo much ſeeming ſhamefacedneſs, that the judge I perceived took ſpecial notice of my ſeeming modeſt behaviour. He thereupon askt me how old I was: My Lord (ſaid I) my Nurſe informs me I am twelve years old. A prime youngſter indeed, replyed my Lord; but why ſaid you your Nurſe inform'd you, and not your Mother? May it pleaſe your Honour, (ſaid I) I was never ſo happy, either to know what ſhe was, or where ſhe is. At this reply of mine, I obſerved his Lordſhip more amazed, than he was before ſurprized,

to

to ſee ſo young a Felon appear before him; his wonder was ſo great, that he only cauſed me to be ſet aſide, and ſo proceeded to the Trial of others. I was ſo kind to my Granney, that I impeacht her not, and indeed her *mittimus* ran (by the connivance of her old friend the Juſtice, who had been a good Milch Cow to him, but could now keep her off no longer) for only keeping a Houſe of Debauchery, and rank Bawdry. At the laſt day of the Seſſions I was ſentenced to be Tranſported, and the venerable Gentlewoman (out of pure love to ſee me aboard) had the favour to ride (by reaſon of her great age) in a certain thing, vulgarly called a Tumbril, being Carted through the Town, attended according to cuſtom, with the uſual Ceremonies that are duly performed on ſuch ſolemn occaſions.

CHAP. VIII.

Priſons marr and not mend, giving growth to the ſeeds of Roguery: He is releaſt out of Gaol, and ſent aboard a Virginia *man, in order to his tranſportation; he makes his eſcape on ſhore in the Cock-boat from* King road, *and travails on foot to* Barnſtable; *he is entertained by an Hoſtler, what a notorious trick he ſerves his Maſter; and how again his Maſter was notably revenged of him.*

IN that ſhort time of my confinement, I had made a conſiderable addition to my ſtock of Boldneſs and Roguery, and was competently furniſhed with ſubtility and craft to manage my Roguiſh deſign: Nothing troubled me more, than that I had not my liberty to put in practice what I thought I very well underſtood

derſtood. Thus you ſee a Priſon moſt commonly mars, but ſeldom mends any. Whilſt I was wiſhing for, and ſtudying how I might procure my enlargement, a Merchant came into the Priſon, and enquired for the Lad which was ſentenced to be Tranſported; I (being overjoyed with the hopes of getting looſe) prevented his further enquiry by telling him, I was the perſon. Hereupon he fixt his eyes upon me, which ſeem'd well pleaſed at the ſpackneſs of my youth, and pleaſantly askt me; whether if I were not forc'd, I had any deſire to travail: I told him I fancied it above any thing, and were I left to my liberty, would make it my choice above all things. *Since that you are ſo willing* (ſaid he) *you ſhall go for* Virginia; *and that I may be ſure of you, ſtay here till I am ready to go, in the mean time I ſhall provide you neceſſaries, and when the time comes, pay your Fees.* I preſently framed a ſad countenance, and begged of him for the ſake of all that was Sacred, to take me with him, and I would ſerve him in any condition he pleaſed; and that if he did miſtruſt me, if he pleaſed, *I* would go inſtantly aboard. Being half perſwaded I would perform what *I* promiſed, and taking compaſſion of my pitiful moan, called the Keeper to him, and paying my Fees, inſtantly ſees me out before him; he would not abſolutly truſt me yet, and therefore bad me go ſtraight forward till he countermanded me, which was but once in all the way, he drove me to his own houſe. This Gentleman was one of the moſt conſiderable Merchants in *Briſtol*, who trading much to *Virginia*, queſtioned not but to make a conſiderable Return of me, being a luſty young comly Lad. By reaſon our ſhip lay by the Key ſide, a luſty Veſſel of

of three hundred Tuns, carrying twenty four Guns, he would not truſt me on Board, fearing leſt the nearneſs of the Veſſels lying aſhore, I ſhould have the better opportunity of making my eſcape: Wherefore he kept me at home with eyes enough over me; and that I might not be altogether idle, he diſplaced two or three old Servants of his out of their wearifom imployments, *Dog-turn-Spits* I mean (a uſual cuſtom through the whole City) that I might take their turn. Now that my Maſter might not think I needed to be forced upon buſineſs, mornings, and afternoons, (wherein I had ſome cooling hours) I voluntarily imployed in learning to write, the ſight whereof gave my Maſter a wonderful Satisfaction; inſomuch, that he bought me a new Canvas Suit, with Shoes, Stockins, Hat, and two new Shirts, but yet would not ſuffer me to ſtir abroad.

But now our Ship being rigg'd, victualed, and all things ready for a Voyage, fell down into *King-road*, and he in a Boat the next day ſent me aboard of her. There being now no hopes left for eſcaping, I endeavoured to pleaſe my ſelf by promiſing my thoughts things impoſſible, or very improbable when I Landed in *Virginia*. But that night there aroſe a great ſtorm the Wind blowing hard at South-Eaſt, which made a very turbulent Sea, which ſo frighted me, that I fully reſolved if I eſcaped this, I would never be drowned in another like it. We rode with but one Anchor, which coming home we were forc'd to drop our ſhete Anchor which held us, and ſo rid it out.

The next Morning ſeveral of our men went aſhore to the *Crock* and *Pill*, there to refreſh themſelves. I would have gone with them, but could not be admitted

ted; wherefore I reſolv'd ere it was long to go aſhore by my ſelf. In the day time it was impoſſible to attempt any ſuch enterpriſe; wherefore I judged the night muſt aſſiſt me, or nothing would; the Wind being not fair, nor likely to be, one day moſt of our men took Boat, and went up to *Briſtol*, where taking their leaves of their friends, came down to us as merry as Hawks, thoſe that had been aboard all day, upon the return of the Ships Crew, went aſhore to the *Pill*, where in leſs time, they got as conſiderable a Doſe as the moſt head ſtrong of any of the reſt had done. Night coming on, ſleep needed no other Harbinger to put them to reſt, than their own ebriety, which ſoon had lull'd four parts in five into a ſenſleſs ſecurity, ſnoaring ſo loud, that I wonder they did not wake with their own noiſe. Now was the time I imagined, that Providence had alotted for my eſcape, and ſo ſeeing the Decks in a manner clear, I got into the Steerage, deſigning to look for the Cock-Boat, which uſed to be a Stearn of us, but looking out of the Port-hole I ſaw two luſty fellows (that were Paſſengers) in the Boat, and were juſt putting off from the Ship ſide. I ſpake ſoftly to them, and threatned to diſcover them by crying out, if they would not take me in: they ſeeing a neceſſity for ſo doing, conſented to my propoſition, and in I got; they plyed the Oars ſo well, that we quickly got aſhore, landing at *Portſhead*, for the Bell would have been a means to diſcover us; and there turning our Boat a Drift, away we travelled by Land moſt part of that night; in the Morning by enquiry, we found our ſelves not farr from *Mineard*: we left the Town on our right hand, not daring to venture through it, and keep ſtreight

ſtreight on till we came within ſix miles of *Barnſtable*, there we lay in a Barn that night; my two other Comrades had a mind to go to *Plimouth*, but I refuſed to go with them, having been all ſuſpected the day before, begging on the Road; I thought my ſelf more ſecure to be alone, imagining few would ſuſpect a Lad ſo young, and therefore reſolved for *Barnſtable*. Whither being come, I addreſſed my ſelf to an Inn, where begging a while, the Hoſtler chanc'd to take notice of me, and ſeeing me to be a notable well truſſed Lad, askt me, whether I would aſſiſt him in rubbing down Horſe-heels? Yes (ſaid I) with all my heart; he never queſtioned my fidelity, nor what friends I had, for he thought it would be to little purpoſe for ſo ſmall a younger to ride away with a Horſe, riding to water, *&c.* The frequent falls I had (being a bad Horſeman) had like to have put me by my new occupation; for I was half of the opinion it was equally as dangerous to ride a Horſe-back as to ride at Anchor: and to lift me clear out of the Saddle, my Worſhipful Maſter did take much notice of my frequent miſcarriages, and fearing leſt by my unskilful riding, or ſome other accident I ſhould have my neck broken one time or other and ſo be forced to keep me, he was reſolved to turn me off; that which confirmed him in his reſolution, was a ſcurvy trick I ſerved him, which was intended for the Tapſter, which is as followeth.

The Tapſter of our Inn, when he found me any time at leiſure, would commonly imploy me in attending his Gueſts, drawing Drink, and ſo forth; I ſeldom went into the Cellar, but I would be ſure to drench my throat; for I thought I had wronged my Mouth, if

if I had miſſed one time, by which means he could not but catch me ſometimes; at firſt he took little notice, but finding me to make it a common practice, every time he ſo caught me, he made my ears pay for the injuries my mouth did him; but one time above the reſt, he did beat me in the Cellar ſo unmercifully with a Hoop-ſtick, that after it I thought I needed at leaſt twenty of them to keep my ribs together: the continual pain this beating put me to, did alſo rack my inventions in ſtudying how I might be revenged of him; I could find no other way but this; obſerving the Tapſter to be very laxative, I went and conſulted the Houſe of Office, and found the middle Board to be ſuitable and ſerviceable to my purpoſe; for by looſing of but two or three Nails I could make it turn *topſy turvy*, like a Trencher with a Tub of water to catch Mice withal; but firſt I plumm'd the depth of the Vault, and found it in Golden Oar not above a yard in depth; finding that I ſhould not hazzard his life by this enterprize, and having a brave opportunity to drink that night, (there being great ſtore of Gueſts in our Houſe) I ſwallowed ſo much for joy that my project would take, that my eyes were *miskie*: however all being abed, and I the laſt up, reſolved to be the firſt in the morning to prevent others from dropping into the Pit-fall; knowing well from former experience that our looſe Tapſter would be the early, and firſt handſeller of this deſign.

At length growing exceeding drowſie, *I* fell aſleep under the Manger, a wonder to me ſince, that the Horſes by treading on me, had not ſpoiled my face, or ſome other part: about four of the Clock in the Morning *I* was awakened out of my ſleep, by an exceeding

ing Griping of my Guts, and found a great pronneſs to go to Stool; the fumes that aſcended from the exceſs of Drinking Ale the night paſt, had not only intoxicated my Brain, but for that time ſo depraved my memory, that I remembred not any thing of the Trap I had laid for the Tapſter; wherefore to obey Natures commands, I ran haſtily into the Houſe of Office, with my Breeches in my hands, and treading on the Board, it ſlipt up, and in I dropt.

I thought once to have cried out for help, but hang it thought I, it is better puniſh my noſe a while, than loſe my revenge: wherefore placing the Board (which I could eaſily reach) even again, I crept up into the corner of the Vault. I waited a great while, but none came, till my patience was almoſt worn out; but at laſt I heard the tread of ſome ones footing, I ſuppoſing it to be the Tapſters, was even over-joyed; But it was my Maſter, ſtepping boldly into the Houſe of Office, and treading on the ſame Board, ſlipt into it as I had done before; whereupon catching him about the neck (for I was almoſt up to the Chin) which had like to have frightned him more than his fall; welcome ſaid I, the welcomeſt man living; you might have come ſooner, I have waited here an hour at leaſt; he thinking the Devil had been in the Vault (for he could not conjecture any mortal could endure to be there ſo long) cri'd out as loud as his Wind-pipe (which was Organ-Tenor ſize) would permit; which doubling, he at length drew help unto him, they ſent him the end of a Broom-ſtick (preſerving their hands for a ſweeter imployment) by the help of which he got out; but no ſooner was he on is Feet, but without ſo much as thanking them, cries out, the Devil is in the Vault, and ſo ran diſtracted byinto the Houſe;

The

The People hearing him ſay ſo, ran after him, leaving me to ſhift for my ſelf. There might I have ſtaid long enough, had not my own hands helpt me out. Being in the Houſe he ſmelt ſtronger than twenty of *Tom*—Ponds put all together, and ſo great was his fright, that that added ſomewhat to the ſtrong ſcent, if any addition could be made. He was perſwaded firſt to waſh, and change his habit, before they asked any queſtions concerning this ſtrangely ſurprizing adventure, for it was impoſſible to entertain any diſcourſe with him. In the mean time I having got out, ran immediately into the Horſe-pond, and there rowled and waſh't my ſelf all over, and coming out, finding that would not abſolutely do, I uncloathed my ſelf, taking my Doublet firſt, and waſhing that throughly, and ſo my Breeches, with my Shirt, and every thing elſe about me, I waſhed ſeverally and diſtinctly from thoſe fetid impurities, they had contracted in the Houſe of Office.

By this time my Maſter the Hoſtler had ſhifted himſelf, and abundance of the Neighbours were gathered about him, to be informed how this diſaſter befell him. *Why ſurely Sirs* (ſaid he) *it muſt be the Devil, and no body elſe, that owed me a ſhame, and now paid me home*; at that very inſtant I came into the room where my Maſter was, who ſeeing me in that manner dropping, and looking as bad, as one that had been drawn through a Common-ſhore; *How now* (ſaid he) *whence comeſt thou? What haſt thou been doing?* Maſter, ſaid I, (if I miſtake not) you were talking juſt now of the Devil owing you a ſhame, pray tell me what it was, and how he paid it you home, and *I* ſhall acquaint you with his late too much familiarity with me.

me. Hereupon my Maſter repeated what he had related before briefly to me, telling me, that going to the Houſe of Office this morning early, he had no ſooner ſtept within the doors, but the Devil, (for he was ſure on't he ſaid) unjoynted a Board, and pull'd him into the Vault, and then jear'd him by welcomeing, him into that ſtinking place. O Maſter (ſaid I) as you were ſerved, ſo was me your Boy (though ſomewhat differing in manner) and I think by the ſame ſplightful Devil: For coming out of the Stable by four in the morning, I was catcht up, and thrown upon our great Dung-mixen, there was I rowled to and fro for half an hour, and at laſt rowled into our Horſe-pond; out of which with much difficulty I ſcrabbled out with my life; you ſee what a pickle I was in. This I feigned, that he might not think me guilty of that Plott I had laid for another, but was every whit as glad, it did light on him, for his beating me ſo often unmercifully.

Large was the talk of this ſtrange accident, moſt not knowing what to think on't. He for his part a while did fooliſhly believe that ſome infernal Spirit owing him ſome ill will, had thus abuſed him, till by ſome apparent Symptomes he had diſcovered, he concluded me the Author. To the intent he might the more fully revenge himſelf on me, he took no notice on what had paſſed, neither did he expreſs any diſſatisfaction towards me. One Night about 11 and 12 a Clock, when the whole Family were moſt of them in Bed, he merrily askt me whether I had any Money; yes, ſaid I, here is two pence. Come on, ſaid he, I will wager with thee a Pot, I will jump further at twice, than thou ſhalt do at five times; done, ſaid I;

where ſhall the place be? Why here ſaid he in this very Entry where we are. He begun firſt, and made three large jumps which reacht as far as the Threſhold of the outer dore. Having ſo done, I followed him, and at the fourth, I toucht the Threeſhold with my Toes: and then ſtraitning my ſelf to ſhew my nimbleneſs and activity, I leapēd a great way into the Street; he perceiving that, ſhut the door againſt me, locking it, he ſpake through the Key-hole, ſaying, *Good night, look your lodging elſewhere, your Lordſhip is too nimble for me.* My entreaties were many and urgent to let me in, but I found him ſo inexorable, that had I ſupplicated his Horſes, I might have found as much favour, as from this Eſquire of the manger.

CHAP. IX.

He relates what extremities he was put to, for want of Food and Lodging. His Lodging in a Mill, lying in the Hopper, diſcovers a very pleaſant paſſage between the Miller and his Wench; and by a ſtrange accident got a very good Supper that night; with many other remarkable adventures.

I Was not ſo much troubled that by being ſhut out of dores I was deſtitute of a lodging as to think how baſely I was turn'd off by this Yeoman of the Hempen Collar. Neither did I trouble my ſelf at the thoughts of lying underneath a Stall, (for I had too lately been intimately acquainted with lying on the boards) but my mind was ſomewhat perplext when I thought of meeting the Conſtable and his Watch

Watch, I fear'd no lodging ſo much as one of their providing. To avoid which, I crept under a Stall, and ſlept there that night. The Sun had lookt into our Hemiſphere with half an Eye, when I awaked, and glad I was I had ſo much light to ſee which way I pleaſed to ſteer my Courſe. I directed my Feet toward the Key, where I knew I ſhould find diverſity of Objects to pleaſe my roving mind. I walkt there ſo long, ſtill my ſtomack grew enraged to that height that nothing could pacify it but a good Breakfaſt, which I knew not now to obtain, or give it the leaſt ſatisfaction, but by begging. Whilſt I was thus plotting how to ſupport Life, a Man in good habit ſteps aſhore from one of the Ships which lay by the Key, and walking a turn or two with me, askt me who I belonged to, if to none, whether I wanted a Service? To whom I replyed, I was an Orphan and Maſterleſs, and that I ſhould be glad to hear of a good Service, and be thankful to him that ſhould help me to one. That I will ſaid he, if thou wilt Sail with me to the *Barbadoes*, thou ſhalt fare as I do, and ſince thou art a well favoured Lad, I will have a care of thee as of my own Son (it may be ſo, if he loved him no worſe than my Father loved me) thou ſhalt do well ne're queſtion. He askt me whether I would eat or drink, I told him I was both hungry and thirſty; come aboard with me (ſaid he) and thou ſhalt be ſatisfied in both. I thought it no prudence, but rather very hazardous to go aboard then, and therefore beg'd his excuſe; he perceived my fearfulneſs, inſiſted on that no farther, and ſo carried me to a Cooks Shop where he called plentifully for Meat and Drink, and that I might not want ſawce to my Meat, he recounted to

me the pleaſures of going to Sea, what idle Lives they lived, doing nothing but imploying their thoughts in what paſt time they ſhall next divert themſelves in; Sometimes playing at *Hob*, (a uſual Game amongſt Sea-men in a calm) afterwards at Cards, Dice, Tables, Talking, Walking, Smoaking, Drinking or Fiſhing, and then ſpeaking of *Barbadoes* and other Iſlands they uſually touch upon, he told nothing but wonders of them. Though I had not the Faith to believe all he ſaid, yet I could not but be much pleaſed at the Relation. He ſpent ſome hours with me to poſſeſs me with a belief of the verity of what he ſaid; and when he had expreſt himſelf ſo largely that he could not utter any more without Repetition, he demanded whether I would reſolve to go with him; I promiſed faithfully I would, but deſired of him reſpit till the next day; thinking I intended thereby to evade him, he would not conſent to it, alledging I was too young to catch old Birds with chaff; this was but a trick of mine to fill my Belly, and that this was not the firſt time I had ſerved others ſo; however I will pay my ſhare of the Reckoning, and ſo farewell and be hang'd: there being ſixteen pence to pay, he threw down his eight pence. As he was marching down the ſtairs I called after him, begging him to ſtay, he returning, I vowed I would come to him the next day, and be abſolute at his devotion; I backt this Vow with many Oaths and Proteſtations, the breaking of which I valued as little as Lovers do theirs in an amorous heat, if neceſſity ſhould force me to it. Well, ſaid he, I will believe thee for once, but if thou doeſt cheat me, I ſhall find you ſome time or other, and then———

Glad I was to part with him, reſolving, if I could make

make any other ſhift, I would not go with him, Night drew on without any other ſucceſs that day; and now wandring to and fro in the dark not knowing where to go, I arrived at the foot of *Welcomb*-Bridge; finding my ſelf ſo near the Town end, I reſolved to get ſhelter under ſome Hay-mow, or creep into ſome Pig-ſtie. As I walkt along I ſaw a glimmering light, and approaching it, found it in a Mill; I lookt in, but ſaw no body, whereupon *I* boldly entred (it being late) and ſate down a while by the Hopper, to the intent if any ſhould have taken notice of my entring the Mill, I might there in view have been excuſed my ſelf. Now coming, and finding my ſelf alone, I got up into the Hopper (being a very large one) and there lay cloſe. I had not been long there, before I heard the Miller come into the Mill, and diſcourſed with an other, which I judged Female by her voice: not long after came his Boy with ſome Liquor of what ſort I know not, about to depart, the Miller charged him to bring the Capon as ſoon as it was ready.

By their diſcourſe I ſoon perceived the intent of that their nocturnal meeting; for though the Mill ſtood ſtill, the Miller was reſolved to grind that night. Various was their pretty little amorous tittle tattle; but growing weary of talking, there was a ceſſation, and then I could hear a buſtling and puffing, as if the Miller had over-charg'd his arms by lifting too many ſacks of corn at once. After this, no noiſe at all; then began a a freſh Dialogue, but ſomewhat better qualified than the firſt; Their diſcourſe was full of kiſſing Parentheſes, ſometimes one with another: their controverſie at length grew hot, and the arguments of theſe two Diſputants were ſo powerful on each ſide, that they

had not a word to ſay. In the mean time in came the Boy with the Capon, ſetting it down. but where is the Bottle (Sirrah) ſaid the Miller? The Winer ſaid the Boy won't let it go without leaving Money for it beſide the Sack; whereupon giving him Money charg'd him to make haſte, which he did accordingly. The Miller and the Wench fell to it luſtily. I could hear by the ſwift motion of thir chops, not letting three bitts paſs their greedy throats, without ſix Gulps of Wine to waſh them down. I wiſht them both in the Mill Dam, ſo that I could have had ſome of their good cheer. At laſt the Miller being indifferently ſatisfyed, and impatient to taſte of other Fleſh, than that of a Fowl, ſaid, *Come my dear we will ſet aſide what remains till anon, which will taſte better then, than now*; I did wiſh they would have ſet it up in the Hopper; After this they fell to their former dallyances; and all was huſh again. I reaching up my head by degrees, reſolving to ſee; and leaning too far over the Hopper to make the full diſcovery, I and the Hopper came tumbling over and over down upon the Miller, and with my Foot had ſo dabb'd him into the Pole, that half ſtund, up he got with his Wench, and both ran as if the Devil had been in the purſuit of them; not knowing (when they had recovered the fright) how ſoon they would return, I reſolved not to be idle, but ſnatching up the remains of the Capon and the Bottle I ran too, but it was a contrary way, being at a good diſtance, and having recovered the Fields I got under a Hedge, where I made a ſhift to fill my Belly, though I could not ſee what I did eat; my Wine ſerved to keep me warm in my new cold lodging; but I found it had not cured my bruiſed Bones, which

which troub'ed me ſo much, I curſed my curioſity, as well as the Miller, who was the cauſe of all this mischief, wiſhing I had his Stones to peck for him.

My happineſs roſe with the Sun, whoſe glorious beams having put to flight the gloomy ſhades of the night, had alſo in part routed thoſe cares and fears which had ſurrounded me on every ſide. And now I began to remember my promiſe to go for *Barbadoes*; which (after I had ſeriouſly conſidered with my ſelf) concluded it to be the beſt expedient I could propound to my ſelf for a future livelihood. But thought I, it would not be amiſs to carry ſome Venture along with me; but ſince I had neither Parents, Friends, Credit, nor Money, there was no way to procure any ſuch thing, but by my wits, which I was reſolved to ſtretch, or ſtretch for it; I walkt the ſtreets almoſt one whole day, but could not contrive a way to inſinuate my ſelf into any ſhop, without much ſuſpition, being ſo ſmall an Urchin; But rather than ſpend a day thus fruitleſly, I purpoſed to hazzard all; and therefore coming by a Shooemakers Shop, I boldly ſtept in, and as confidently askt the Maſter thereof, whether he knew my Maſter; who is thy Maſter quoth the Shooemaker? Capt. ——ſaid I; he replyed, he knew him not. You may then ſaid I, for he pointed to this Shop even now, bidding me ſtay till he came, he intends to buy a parcel of ſhooes of you, being bound to Sea in a long Voyage. The Man hearing me tell this formal and plauſible tale, deſired me to ſit down, telling me I was heartily welcom; I told him I had been ſitting all day, and therefore deſired him to give me the liberty of walking in his Shop, with all my heart ſaid he; and with all my ſoul too, thought I;

for by this means I had the opertunity of Surveying the Shop, and ſeeing what things my hands might lay hold on with leaſt difficulty and hazard. He not ſuſpecting me in the leaſt, followed what he was before about at his Cutting-board, and his back being towards me, I ſecured a pair of Childrens Shooes, which lay among many more careleſly on a Seat, which I ſecuring, I ſtept to the Man at his Cutting-Board; ſometimes looking on his work, and then ſtared him caution by my eyes to have a care, leſt I ſhould ſteal the noble Trade of the *Gentle craft* from him; then ſtanding at the door as if I lookt every moment for my Maſters coming; and then retreating inwards, would wonder, or rather mutter to my ſelf, that if he ſhould ſtay ſo long. Walking a turn or two backwards and forwards, I eſpyed a pair, that I verily believed would fit me, my heart leapt within me at the diſcovery, and my fingers never left itching till I pincht them by the Ears, who made no outcry, when I conveyed them into my Breeches; fearing to ſtay longer; (knowing to well the danger if I were taken) I came to the Maſter of the Shop with my Hat in my Hand, telling him I would go look my Maſter, aſſuring him I ſhould find him either at the *Roſe*, or *Kings-head* Taven, and as ſoon as I found him would return again inſtantly. Do ſo, my pretty Lad, quoth he, do ſo; which I did with ſuch an over eager haſte, that had he obſerved me, I might have been betrayed thereby. Overjoyed with this ſucceſs I fully purpoſed to be couragious for the future, and baniſh every baſe thonght, that might leſſen or abate a dangerous or deſperate reſolution. To increaſe my purchaſe I walkt into another Street remote

remote from that I committed my firſt Theft, where I buſily imployed my eyes in the ſearch of any advantage, though ne're ſo inconſiderable; they quickly found out what my thoughts aimed at, and therefore drew near my intended prey, a Hoſiers Shop, the Maſter whereof was buſily imployed in making up of Stockings of all ſorts into Papers, marking thereon the Prizes. A Logger-headed Fellow, taller by the Head than my ſelf, had little to do, it ſeems then to gape and ſtare on the Gentleman that was at work; he lolling over the Stall, I came and leaned by him, where we both gazed ſo long, till we had ſeen him make up ſeveral Parcels.

I had a great mind to have ſome Stockins to my Shooes, if I knew how to get them. There was no thoughts of going in after the obſolete way of nimming them, under the pretence of cheapning, for my Habit and Age would have been incongruos to that deſign; I had various Projects in my head, and I verily believ'd one would take, (ſince there was but one man in the Shop) if I knew but which of them would prove moſt infallibly effectual; for I approved them all as very good. Seeing his work almoſt at an end, I thought it high time that mine ſhould begin; wherefore this Lobcock (who lookt like one who never was nor ever would be good for any thing) I ſay, I propounded him at the fitteſt inſtrument *I* could uſe for my deſigned good. To commence this Knaviſh ſtratagem, *I* pincht him gently by the Ear, which he feeling, grumbling like one ſuddainly awakt out of his ſleep, asked me what's the matter? Nothing ſaid I, he lolling again after his afore accuſtomed humour, I twek't him again, at which he grew angry, and threatned

ned to box me; *I* regarding his threats no more than the humming of a Gnat, ſtuck a Pin to the Head in his Breech; at which he caper'd like a dancing Horſe; and ney'd ſo loud, that *I* could hardly forbear laughing, but he ſoon made me more ſerious, by lending me ſuch a cuff on the Ear, *I* thought he had ſtruck my head off my Shoulders; *I* endeavoured to defend my ſelf as well as I could, warding his blows, and now and then returning one, creeping as near the Shop door as I could; the Maſter of the Shop perceiving my Antagoniſt was like to be too hard for me, left of papering his Stockins, to part two ſo unequally matcht; that was my pollicie, that I might get him on my ſide; with much ado, by the help of my Shop-friend, I diſ-ingaged my ſelf from him, and ſeemingly much afraid, I ran violently into the Shop, pretending to fly from my furious adverſary; and turning haſtily about, I ſaw the Hoſier was much concerned in keeping the Looby from running in upon me; all this while his back was towards me, which favoured my exploit ſo rarely well, I whipt up a Paper of ſix pair of Stockins, and ſent them into my Breeches undiſcovered, to keep company with the Shoes; having finiſhed this work, I had ſo cunningly plotted I called to the Hoſier, Maſter, Maſter, ſaid *I*, let the cowardly Lubber come, and let me ſee what he dare do, I commend the little Boy ſaid the Hoſier, and ſo looſing him, he ran furiouſly upon me, *I* being leſs by much than he, dodg'd him, and ſo got clear out of the dore, the Hoſier holding him in the Shop, till *I* had cleerly eſcap'd him; The Hoſier, (as *I* underſtood afterwards) preſently miſſing his Stockings, overtakes this Boy, that made not half the haſte that I did,

did, to be far enough from the Shop, and dragging him back, charg'd him with ſtealing a Paper of Stockins who ſtifly denied it, as well he might. The other told him that though he lookt like a ſimple ignorant Dolt-head, yet he had found him the cuningeſt Knave that ever he met with: Theſe are new tricks indeed, ſpick and ſpan new, piping hot. I have heard, *when Knaves fall out, honeſt men come by their own*; but *I* never heard when two ſuch Young Rogues fall out, honeſt men ſhould looſe their Goods. Sirrah, not only produce the Stockins you now have ſtoln but thoſe I have lately miſt, and that preſently; you are like to pay for all. A Young Lad (one of my Confederates afterwards) ſtood by all the while, and told me, that his Geſtures at that time out-did all the changlings that ever had been before him; all that the Hoſier could get out of him was, that the boy he would have beaten had them; This would not ſerve the turn, but cauſed the Conſtable to carry him before the Mayor, who hearing the whole ſtory, wondred at the ſubtility of the Plot, eſpecially proceeding from ſuch Green Heads (concluding us Partners) and that his Worſhip might hinder him from the like, or worſe attempts, committed him to *Bridewell*, there to remain one whole Month, and thrice a week to be ſeverely laſht. I was glad to hear of his confinement being freed from the fear of meeting him in the Street, neither durſt I much ramble abroad for fear of meeting the Hoſier; wherefore I was reſolved to make what haſt I could to get me and my *Cargo* aboard; to the increaſing whereof I found the acquaintance I got among young Apprentices, with my skill in *Span-Farthing* and *Chuck*, to be very inſtrumental; For being buſie at play whilſt

whilſt their Maſters were at Dinner or Break-faſt, (which were my chief Market times) I could with eaſe ſlip into the Shop, and ſo whatever came to my hands was lawful Prize. What I had gotten at *Chuck*, *Span-Farthing*, and ſuch like Juvenil Games, I found ſufficient to provide me ſuſtenance for the day, and had ſpare hours enough to exerciſe my Art of Pilfring; what each days Theft had produced, I warily carried to my Magazine, a place that I had found out, ſecret and ſecure enough for that purpoſe, *viz.* a ruinated old Caſtle, not far diſtant from the Town, rarely frequented by any. In the Wall whereof, I found a large hole, where I intomb'd my Goods, I like a Cunny with her Stock of young Rabbets, never let it lie open, when I left it.

There was not a Day wherein I did not add to my Store; ſo that thriving thus in my Theeving, and ſucceſs attending all my Rogueries, *I* grew ſo impudently confident, that *I* thought almoſt that *I* could have ſtoll'n a mans skin from him without diſcovery. But Danger and Deſtruction are ſeldom nearer, then when ſecurety lies at the Door. *I* had been in many ſhops but never in a Bookſellers, wherefore *I* was reſolved to make one Trial there; and ſtudying what Book to ask for, (being acquainted with very few) I pitcht upon an *Accidence*; but that *I* thought would not ſuit with my Canvas habit, *I* then thought a *Spelling-Book* would be much fitter; ſo advancing within the Shop Dores, *I* demanded of the Apprentice whether he had an ſuch Book; he anſwered affirmatively. Pray let me ſee it, ſaid *I*; whilſt the young man was reaching down a bundle of ſtitcht Books, in which it was tyed up; *I* had cleanlily conveyed a Book into

m

my Breeches, (which proved to be a *Practice of Piety*) the Apprentice not finding it in that bundle, ſearcht in another, which gave my hands the liberty of ſeizing on another Book, a piece of Divinity as well digeſted and as Practical as the former, called *A Help to Devotion*; his Maſter which lay covert this while in a place called *Catch Thief*, haſtily called his Man to him, to tell him what he had obſerved, and to let me alone till *I* was going away, and then to detain me; giving me in the mean time all the advantagious opportunities *I* cou'd wiſh for; and to diſſemble the matter the better, the Apprentice fumbled a pretty while before he could find it; by that time *I* had made other purchaſes, but one eſpecially, the Title whereof you ſhall know inſtantly.

Having found the Book, he delivered it into my hands; *I* tumbling it over askt the Price: Two Groats, ſaid he; *I* that had no mind to buy it, was reſolv'd to bid little enough; will you take Three Pence; The Raſcal ſnatcht the Book out of my Hands ſo furiouſly, *I* thought he had torn it to pieces; and then griping me faſt by the Arm, (a Pox on him *I* did not like well his looks before) *Sir*, ſaid he, *Your Worſhip is very merrily diſpoſed to offer me as little again as my commodity coſt me. What Books elſe do you want? Or is your Honour of all ſorts well ſtored?* So clapping his hands on the knees of my Breeches, diſcovered what *I* had been doing. This diſgracing Villain makes no more ado, but bawls out aloud, Maſter, Maſter, come quickly, *I* have caught the Book-worm that hath devoured ſo many Books of late. The Grave old *Segnior* upon this out-cry quits his covert, and in a Spaniſh pace advanced towards me, accoſting me

me with the worthy Title of *Honoured Sir, I am glad to ſee you, and am much troubled you ſhould heretofore viſit my Shop, and I abroad. I underſtand you are a great lover of Books*; *inſomuch* (they ſay) *you are a little walking library: be not offended Sir, if* I *take the boldneſs to look into the Title of one or two of them:* ſo putting his hands into my Breeches, drew out a *Practice of Piety: An excellent good Book. I proteſt* (quoth he) *you are to be commended for making election of ſuch approvedly ſound Divinity, to inform you of the true principles of Chriſtianity, diving again*; he brings out M. *Scudders Chriſtians dayly walk*; Upon the ſight hereof he ſeem'd to be raviſht, ſaying, *ſurely this is a young Angel*; *and if he reads and practiſes ſuch precious Books as theſe, he will be Canoniz'd for a Saint before his deceaſe.* And then applying himſelf to me; ſaid, *for certain your walk and the* Chriſtians dayly walk *differ much, for his dayly walks are in the righteous paths of honeſty and Juſtice, but you walk dayly up and down to ſee what Thefts, Cheats, and Rogueries you can perform. But let us make a further enquiry*, and then he drew out a *Help to Devotion. Do you ſee* (ſaid he) *how Devout he is? how piouſly ſtudious? not one ſcurrilous Pamphlet, or Play-book in all his Study*; *What ſhall we call him*; Religious Votary. *But indeed Sir*, (ſaid he) *you are highly too blame not to put your books* (*having ſo many*) *into ſome method or order, and not let them lie thus confuſedly without ſhelves.*

He ſearch a pretty while again before he could find any more, at laſt he found in a blind corner a Book. and bringing it to light, what ſhould it be, but Mr. *Smiths Great Aſſize*; *Look you here* (ſaid he) *what* I *have*

have found at laſt? before which at laſt you muſt appear, and there anſwer for all the Villanies you have committed, and then will theſe very Beoks (thou haſt ſtoll'n) come in as evidences againſt thee; but hoping thou wilt eſcape there, they ſhall convict thee here, and ſo preſently ſent his Man for a Conſtable, who coming, we ſtraight way marcht to the Mayors. As ill luck would have it, we were to paſs by both the Hoſiers Shop, and the Shooe-makers, who enquiring of the rabble what was the matter, were informed that they were carrying a young Thief to the Mayor, for ſtealing Books; the Shooe-maker was the firſt I paſt by, who ſeeing me, knew me preſently, crying out, *this is the young Rogue that ſtole my ſhooes*; and not long after the Hoſier was in the ſame tone; *this is one of the Raſcals that ſtole my Stockins*, ſo joyning with the multitude, we ſoon arrived at the Mayors houſe; entring which, the Mayor being acquainted with the matter, came down into a large Hall, where my Accuſers each in his order declared my guilt, not omitting any circumſtance that might aggravate my crimes. The Mayor much wondred that I ſhould be ſo notoriouſly Roguiſh at thoſe years, and askt, what I had to ſay for my ſelf. *May it pleaſe your Worſhip* (quoth I, bowing ſo low that my noſe e'ne toucht the Ground) *I am fatherleſs, and Money-leſs, Friendleſs, and Helpleſs, and being ready to ſtarve, I begged up and down the Town, but to very little purpoſe; for I beg'd ſo long without relief, that I knew not how to prolong my Life, without falling into theſe indirect courſes. Had not the People been thus hard hearted, I had not been ſo ſharp witted.* What did you do with the Shooes and Stockins you ſtole? *I ſold them*

(ſaid

(ſaid I) *for Bread and Beer.* Where, ſaid he? *May it pleaſe your Worſhip, I am a ſtranger in this place and if would hang me I know not where the houſe ſtands now.* But what did you intend to do with theſe Books? *And if it pleaſe you, Sir, I intended with all diligence to enquire whether any Ship was going for* Barbadoes, *or any* Engliſh *Plantation abroad and I would go in her; being able to read a little, (and knowing my ſelf to be a wicked Boy) I thought to carry them along with me, to the intent I might both mend my reading; and by my reading thoſe good Books, endeavour to mend my life.* All the ſtanders by amazed to hear me ſpeak after this manner; but more eſpecially the Mayor, who proteſted, although he was near fourſcore, he had not in all his whole life time obſerved the like Preſident; and withal publickly confeſt he knew not what to do in this buſineſs: at length (after he had pawſed a while) ſaid he; *young man, you ſhall have your deſire, you ſhall go to* Barbadoes; *here is a ſhip in the Harbour now ready, only expecting a wind; but that you may not forget your Native Countrey, this Town in particular; but more eſpecially your matchleſs Rogueries, you ſhall be ſharply whipt according to your deſerts, and from the Houſe of Correction immediately ſhipt away. You Gentlemen, that have been ſufferers by this young Rogue, ſee that my ſentence be punctually performed; and if you pleaſe to give your ſelves farther ſatisfaction, let each perſon offended, give the Offender three laſhes apiece, above the general number appointed.* I was ſtraightways hurried from thence to the Houſe of Correction; not only Guarded, but regarded by half the Town; my Accuſers ſtuck to me to the very laſt,

neither

neither was there wanting thoſe (to the number of a ſcore) that verily believ'd I had abuſed them too (having loſt ſeveral things lately) which accompanied me, hoping to give themſelves ſome ſatisfaction, by having each of them a fling at my——. The illeſt lookt Rogue that ever dropt out of a Carts arſe at Tybourn, was ſuperlatively handſom to this Baboon, bare-arſt, Monkey-fac'd Jerker, that was to correct my Rogueſhip. His eyes were of two different colours, and of as different motions; they would turn from each ſometimes to the utmoſt Angles of his face, as if they loathing each other, would not admit of that correſpondency which good eyes bleſs themſelves withal: and then again furiouſly return, angerly endeavouring to pry into each others Cells, how they might extinguiſh the malignancie of that ſight, each other hated for the Neighbour-hood. The Hair of his Head and Eye-brows hung over his Fore-head, and part of his Face, like that of an *Iceland Shock*; Nature when ſhe formed him was very frollick ſom, and ſummon'd all the faculties of her hart to make a thing appear ridiculouſly monſtrous; for the colour of his Face appear'd leſs lovely than a *Molotto's*, the ſides of his Cheek like two pieces of Tann'd-Hide flie-bitten; his Noſe about an inch longer than *Mother Shipton* is pictur'd with, and ſomewhat more curved; his Mouth opened as wide as an Oligators; and his Teeth within that vaſt Concave, alike ſtraggling, his Chin was like the Rump of a Gooſe. When he did ſweat (as he did rarely otherwiſe) his neck lookt very like a Collar of Brawn, ſtanding in its own Pickle; his back was borrowed from a Cammel, his Belly from a Swine, his Leggs from a Crane, much longer,

though not quite ſo ſmall; But I believe the Devil helpt him to Arms, for my Doublet and Shirt being ſtript over my ears, there was an Engine brought much like a Pillorie, in which there was three holes; the middlemoſt for my Head, and one of each ſide for my hands: Theſe Principal Members of mine being there fixt, he takes up a Stick in his hand with five or ſix Cords at the end thereof, with which, at the firſt blow, *I* thought he had cut me in two, following that with three or four more, and in the end did ſo lay about him, that my very Accuſers were forc'd to intreat him to give over; and when that would not do, they were compell'd to hold his hands. To conclude, he had ſo out-done their expectations, that they had now nothing elſe to do but to pity me; but this was not all, my greateſt affliction was yet behind. For leſt thoſe deep furrows the Rogue had plowed up on my Back ſhould feſter or rankle, he had provided a Baſon of Water and Salt to waſh my Wounds withal, which cauſed a pain intollerable. The ſeverity of that puniſhment, hath ever ſince wrought ſo ſtrongly on my imagination, that it makes me tremble, when *I* but caſt my eye on any Book of the ſame Volume of a *Practice of Piety*.

Mr. Mayor had ordered, that the place of my torment ſhould be that of my reſt too for that night, and in the mean time had ſent for the Maſter of the Ship that was bound for *Barbadoes*, (having a part in her himſelf) and informed him that he had a purchaſe for him; a young Lad which he ſhould take aboard, giving him an account how he came by him: it was

all

all one to the Maſter, he cared not what they were, provided ſtrong and healthy: *the Sea and Gallows refuſe none.* The next morning *I* was conveyed aboard; the Maſter knew me at firſt ſight, and ſaid to me, *Did not I tell you, if you were worſe than your promiſe I ſhould meet with you again?* Truly Maſter, (ſaid I) I did not forget what I promiſed, the occaſion of ſo long abſence was only a deſire I had to furniſh my ſelf with ſome Commodities ſuitable to our Voyage; Yeſterday I was coming in all haſt to you, but that taking up ſome odd trifles by the way ſtaid me a while, but I'le aſſure you they coſt me very dear. The The damn'd Dog-whipper that was with me, did cut what I was about to ſay in two, reſolving forſooth, to have his ſaying, telling the Maſter he need not be aſham'd to entertain me in his Ship, for to his knowledge I was no leſs then a Lace-Merchant, and had had great quantitie about me. The Maſter diſmiſſing the Fellow giving him a Teſter for his care of me, took me into his Cuſtody; firſt carrying me into his Cabin to divert himſelf with the relation of my Adventures; perceiving that the rehearſal of but two or three gave him infinite ſatisfaction; I aſſumed the boldneſs (being encouraged thereunto by his intreaty) to give him a plenary relation, not only of what had lately paſt ſince my arrival at *Barnſtable*, but gave him a true and full account of all tranſactions before I left the famous City of *Briſtol*, the place which I am engaged to for my Nativity.

CHAP. X.

He is ſhipt for a Plantation. He gives an account of the Paſſengers aboard, relating what kind of Cattle they were, and diſcovers from their own mouths, thing very obſervable, in ſome of their Lives and Converſations.

THe ſoreneſs of my ſtead back had ſo taken me off my mettle, that for three days, I did little more than eat and ſleep; but hating thus to truant away my life without acting or obſervation; I pull'd up a good heart, reſolving to make the beſt of a bad Market; the firſt thing I had to do, was to get my *Cargo* aboard, not knowing how, or whom to truſt. I ſaw there was no way more feiſable than to acquaint our Maſter Maſter herewith: wherefore one Morning, ſeeing him enter his Cabin alone, I followed him cloſe at the heels, and falling preſently on my knees, I begg'd him in the moſt commiſerating terms my invention would afford, that he would not only be ſecret in what I ſhou'd diſcover to him, but alſo be aſſiſtant to me. *What, Sirrah* (ſaid he) *have you ſome new piece of Roguery to act, and would you have me be your accomplice in it?* Far be it from me, Sir, ſa'd I; the Fact is already done, and by what means known: but the purchaſe none knows but my ſelf where it is, wherefore all that I deſire is, that diſcovering the place, you will lend me your aſſiſtance to bring it hither, Sir, it is a juſt thing I beg of you; I have ſuffered the Law; and therefore it is mine; The very *Turks* condemn that as lawful prize to the uſe of the theeviſh Slave, that can carry it off (though but over the Threeſho'd) with-

without being taken notice of; so I hope, as I have been cleanly in my conveyance, so my punishment will authorise and clear the purchase. Hearing me plead so notably and pittying my condition, told me that none should be concerned in the securiug of my dear bought Goods but himself, and therefore commanded me to tell him where they were; which accordingly I did, and he thereupon immediately fetcht them, locking them up in his own custody, and promising me, as soon as they were Landed, restitution; and that you shall not suspect, Sirrah (said he) that I will embezel any of them, you shall have an Inventory of them, which was thus: Imprimis *Six pair of Worsted Stockins, one pair of Children Shoees, five clean Pipes, two Blew Leather Points, one Pair of Boys Shoes, Two Brass Thimbles, one Alchymy Spoon, one sawcer, one Knitting sheath and four Nedles with it, one old Womans pair of eyes, (Spectacles I mean) which I stole from her Nose as she slept at her own dore, two Horn-books, the pillage of Two Children going to School; besides Giggs, Bouling-stones, Marbles, and Span-Bounters innumerable.*

As my Master was taking in writing an exact account of my Estate, I thought he would have crackt a Gut by his excessive laughter; but when that stitch-begetting-tickling humour would give him leave, he askt me, what I intended to do with these commodities when I Landed? or what Merchant I had advised withal in the proper transportation of these Goods? *Or whether* (said he, laughing aloudly) *have you received any Letters of advice from your Correspondence beyond Sea?* He was not so jocundly vain as I was really serious, which so increast his laughter, that I

was forc'd to exerciſe a great deal of patience, before I could have liberty to return him ſuitable Anſwers to his Queſtions. At length without the leaſt alteration of my countenance I told him, that what I had collected to my great coſt and labour, I thought were as proper for tranſportation to that place we were bound to, as I had conſulted the principal Merchants of *Europe*; for there is nothing ſaid I in all my Cargo but what is very uſeful, and that to all ſorts of Perſons, Sexes, or Ages. For my ſtockins, Points, *&c.* will very well accommodate either Male or Female; the Knitting-ſheath and Thimbles, for the young Wenches; the Spectacles, I gueſs, may ſerve any old Woman from Threeſcore to an Hundred; the Horn-Books they may teach their Children by, to read; and let me alone with the Gigs, Bowling-ſtones and Counters to teach them to play, I mean, Sir, not to play with them, but for them, and if I win (as I know I ſhall) their purchaſing them again, ſhall be my daily gain.

He ſeemed very well pleaſed to hear me make ſuch ſilly Propoſitions to my ſelf for my future advantage; but I propounded to my ſelf privately greater advantages, laid on a more ſolid Baſis; and I did not fear my hopes would wither, or prove ineffectual, ſince as I plainly perceiv'd, I had my Maſters love and countenance to cheriſh them. Being now diſmiſt, I walkt to and fro the Ship, making my ſelf acquainted with the Sea-men, my childiſhneſs converſing with their bruitiſhneſs, as cheerfully as poſſibly I could, who ſeemed well pleaſed with me, though ſeldom pleaſed with any thing elſe but ſtore of ſtrong liquors aboard, and a luſty plump Wench aſhore.

aſhore. From aloft, I got between Decks, and there I found a many beaſtly fellow Travailers, Dog-like kennell'd, *higgledy piggledy* altogether; I was heartily welcom'd in amongſt them, but I was much troubled to ſee them ſo much more in years than my ſelf, till looking narrowly about me, I eſpyed a young Girl of about ſixteen, as I judged. *O Siſter*, quoth I, as confidently, *I am glad to ſee you here, but much more glad that I ſhall have your company in this Voyage.* The Baggage at firſt ſeemed ſomewhat ſullen and coy, but in two or three dayes we grew ſo inwardly acquainted; that if I were aloft, a head, or abaft, or whereſoever, ſhe would be at my elbow. One day asking her the cauſe of being a Shipboard; She told me, her Father and Mother dyed when ſhe was but three years old, and left her to the tutelage of and Aunt, whoſe cruelty increaſt towards her, as ſhe increaſt in years, debarring her even from that convenient ſuſtenance that ſupports Life, ſo that ſhe forced to ſteal her Belly-timber, or be half-ſtarved. This early-forward-fruit was well complexioned, and well featured, having a good natural Genius, attended with an extraordinary boldneſs, both which made me love this Cockatrice Whirligig, what ſhall I call her, and became at laſt much delighted in her converſation. Singling her out one day, we got upon the Poop together, where, after many childiſh flurtings, ſhe perceiving how inquiſitive and deſirous I was to know what was the cauſe her Aunt was thus willing to part from her, by ſending her to *Barbadoes*; ſhe very briskly told me, ſhe would give me the ſatisfaction required, and expecting ſhe would have made a ſigh to the Prologue to her following Diſcourſe, I

found it otherwiſe, for ſhe ſmilingly thus began, to the ſame purpoſe, though not in the ſame words.

My Aunt doth think ſhe hath fully revenged her ſelf of all the injuries I have done her, by thus baniſhing me from her preſence, and my Native Countrey, to a place I never heard of, till I was doom'd to be an Inhabitant therein; and glad I am that ſlaviſh ſentence hath freed me from a more cruel doom of living under the Tyrany of a principal Shee-Divel. *My Father dying, left me as I am inform'd an hundred pound, which by my Mothers death ſoon after was almoſt doubled; my Aunt, before her deceaſe, had ſo inſinuated into her eaſie nature, that ſhe wheedled her to let this Money lie in her hands for my uſe, promiſing my mother, that if I lived to be of age, or marryed, I ſhould have the ſum intire, without ſubſtracting a penny, under what pretence ſoever, and would tender me as her own daughter: My Mother dying with the ſatisfaction of my being well provided for, I was taken into the uſe of my Aunt, and for a while was indifferently lookt after, going to ſchool with her own Son and Daughter. But ſome years being paſt over my head, I found my ſelf differenced from her Children, as much as might be, ſlighted, and abuſed, and my Couzens often beaten for their too much familiarity with me: and that which was worſe, I was circumſcribed of neceſſary proviſion. Having alwayes a bold daring Spirit, I troubled my ſelf as little as I might, but made my wit and induſtry ſupply me, with what my Aunt was defective in; neither was I the ſole ſufferer in this affliction, the ſervants bearing a part with me, having no other proportion at Meals, than what her niggarly hand made*

divi-

dividend of, not making the meat conformable to our ſtomacks, bt our ſtomacks to the meat; having dined, ſhe lockt up all faſt: The ſervants did not half ſo often grumble at her, as my Guts; and that ſhe might know how diſſatisfyed they were, I went one day with an Hammer, and nailed up the Houſe of Office dore; ſhe having an occaſion to make uſe of it, could not be admitted, but being in great haſte, was glad to apply her ſelf to her own Bed-*chamber, which I am ſure ſhe perfumed to the purpoſe. Coming down in a great rage, ſhe enquired into the cauſe of this odd project, and who the authour ſhould be. To be ſhort, ſhe was acquainted that it was I, who being ſummoned to appear before her;* Huzzy, *ſaid ſhe,* was it you that nailed up the Privy door? *I was forced to plead Guilty.* And what was the reaſon (Mrs. Ne're be good) you did ſo? *Why truly forſooth* (quoth I) *you feed well and plentifully, and therefore Nature might command and require you to give her eaſement; and to that purpoſe you have in your Chamber a Cloſe-ſtool; but we your ſervants, as we eat little or nothing, ſo we ſeldom have occaſion to go to that houſe, which to us is altogether uſeleſs.* She knew not whether ſhe were beſt be angry, or pleaſed; but diſſembling her paſſion, ſaid, *well Huzif, if you complain, you ſhall have leſs: the leſs you eat, the cleaner will be your ſheets,* and ſo left me. *Seeing her ultimate reſolution was to keep me ſhort of Victuals; I reſolved to try ſome means whereby I might feed without her knowledge. Fortune favoured me ſo much, that one afternoon going up into her Chamber, wherein ſtood a great Cheſt ſhe uſualy laid up her proviſion in, I ſaw the Key in it, which ſhe by forgetfulneſs had left behind: I preſently ſtept to it, and opening the Lid, found there a Turkey Pie,*

which

which I made ſo bold with, that I took as much as would have ſerved me three dayes, if I had eaten nothing elſe, and that continually. I got me down the ſtairs with all poſſible ſpeed, to preven diſcovery, and ſecure my Provant; I ſoon found a place for that purpoſe, and having hid it, I began tonſider what I had doxe, and that my Aunt would ſoon know, who it was that frighted her Turkey away, none elſe but me daring to be ſo bold; while I was deeply muſing with myſelf, our Cat came purring by me, as if ſhe had been ſent by my good Angel, to be the Sacrifice that ſhould free me from that puniſhment that would inevitably attend this Crime; ſo taking her up in my arms, I ran up into the Chamber, and having claw'd with my Nails the fleſh, and the Cruſt ſufficiently, I committed poor innocent Puſs *to anſwer for what I had done. My Aunt a while after miſſing her Key, went haſtily to her Chamber, and ſeeing it in the Cheſt, condemned her own careleſneſs, and looking thereinto to ſee whether all was well, the Cat bounc'd out into her face; the ſuddain ſurprizal made her make a noiſe more diſcordant, than if twenty Screetch-Owls had been in Conſort. Being alarm'd at this bellow, I was the firſt that got to my Aunt, and very inquiſitive I was of her to know, what was the matter.* Oh! *ſaid ſhe* a ſcurvy Cat, I negligently ſhut in the Cheſt, hath almoſt frighted me out of my wits, beſides what other miſchief ſhe hath done me. *But when ſhe came to ſee what work ſuppoſedly the Cat had done, I was in good hopes that my Aunt would have taken a lodging in* Bedlam.

As I *laid hold on all opportunities to fill my belly, ſo ſome* I *ſtudied*; as for Example, *twice or thrice a*

week

week we had a baked pudding; I bought me a little diſh about the bigneſs of a Porringer, and out of the Pan I would fill it, a fruitful Pudding to have always a young one at the ſide on't. The Dow which I commonly carried to the Bake-houſe, never went home ſo much in the Loaf, for I ſeldom failed to have a Cake out of it; both which I practiſed ſo long till my Aunt found me out, and ſoundly bang'd me for ſo doing. For theſe, and ſuch like faults I was ſo often and ſo unmercifully beaten, that I was reſolved to be reveng'd on her. One day ſhe being invited abroad, I was reſolved to be even with her at home in this manner, One pair of ſtairs ſhe had a ſtately Dining-room, wherein there was a Cup-board on which (being ſpread with a very fine cloath) ſtood variety of all manner of curious Glaſſes, ſuch as ſhe valued above her Plate, and took great delight in them, being prouder of ſhewing thoſe to her gueſts, than ſome are in appearing in a fine new Gown to their Sweet-hearts. Theſe I was reſolved ſhould fall down to my revenge, and be cruſht a pieces by the weight of my indignation and fury; but before I would begin to act this doleful Tragedy, I went, and made all things ready; that is to ſay, I took a large Spannel that we had, and leading him to the Street dore, I ran out into the middle of the Street, calling him after me; he followed me, and I led him a dance ſo long, till he had dirtied himſelf ſufficiently, then going in adoors, I ſtole up ſoftly the back-ſtairs, the Dog following me into the Dining-room; then did I take his feet, and make them imprint the form thereof on the Cloth; having ſo done I pull'd the cloth, and down came the Glaſſes to the Floor, and by the fall not one of them eſcaped; this being done, I got into the next Room, and creept underneath

neath the Bed; *the fall of the Glaſſes ſoon came to the Ears of thoſe that were below, who coming up, found none in the Room, but the Dog, and ſeeing the print of his claws in the Cloth, ne're examined the matter farther, but to work they went with him, who wanting words to juſtifie his innocence, eſcaped the puniſhment by flight; whilſt they purſued him,* I *ſtept down the ſtairs, without being known to have a hand in the Plot, how my Aunt reſented this ſad accident,* I *will give thoſe leave to judge, that ever had the like loſs.*

But this ſtory I *am about to tell you, ſucceeded not ſo well as the former; for it fell to my own ſcurvy Lot, to be puniſhed with that which might have proved a piece of Revenge, though I intended no ſuch matter, and which was worſe, detected me as the author of tht former. Our Maids being in the Fields, bleaching of Clothes, my Aunt commanded me to frie ſome Tripes for her Dinner, which ſhe had brought in from Mayket;* I *laying them careſly upon the Dreſſer, whilſt I was cleaning the Frying-pan, our aforeſaid Dog ſwallowed up one half of them at one mouthful, without chewing them, and had near diſpatcht the other half, before I could come to the reſcue of my Aunts Dinner; I haſtily threw down the Pan, which cauſed my Aunt to come running in, to ſee what was the matter; ſhe ſeeing me buſily and eagerly imployed about the Dog, ſtept back in a place coverd from my ſight, where ſhe might both hear and ſee. I baſted him ſo long, holding him faſt, that he diſgorged one parcel of the Tripes, which* I *taking up laid them on the Dreſſer;* come, *ſaid* I, *baſting him the while,* this is not all you Thief; I muſt have more yet; *the Dog, as if he had underſtood me, diſcharged himſelf of the Theft, and I verily believe, did*

not

not detain one ſingle mouthful behind: ſo much for his honeſty. So, ſo, *ſaid* I, 'tis well, get you gone you Rogue, as long as you did as I did bid you, break my Aunts Cup-board of Glaſſes, I made much of you, but when you turn thief, and ſteal, you muſt be beaten into better manners.

My Aunt all this while was exerciſing her patience even to a miracle, and would not ſpeak a word, becauſe ſhe would ſee what I *intended farther. Hereupon I took my Tripes, and giving them a rench or two in a pail of water, I dryed them, flowred them, and into the Pan they went, and fell a frying them, with as much confidence as if they had had an miſchance befaln them. Being fryed with my ſawce, and all other things ready, I was going in haſte to call my Aunt to Dinner, as ſhe met me, and ſeeming to take no notice, ſeats her ſelf at the Table, and turning one piece then another, then a third, ſhe takes the Diſh, and twirls it round, ſaying,* they were not fryed to her mind, and that I did this on purpoſe, that I might have them all my ſelf, and ſo you ſhall, *ſaid ſhe* and that I may be ſure you do not ſlight good victuals (being too much Corn-fed) I will give you leave to ſit down by me for once.

I knew not what to ſay, which way to look, nor what to think, but perceived by my Aunts eyes, which were all of a flame, that ſhe had diſcovered ſomething that had highly offended her; I would have ſpoken ſomething but ſhe interrupted me, ſaying familiarly, leave off talking and eat your meat: I being ſomewhat backward and ſhe taking notice thereof; how now Mrs. Minks, *(ſaid ſhe)* is not that good enough for you, which is too good for me? Huzif, I will have none of your Dogs-leavings, and ſince you would not let him eat

it

it, you ſhall eat it for him your ſelf; and then I ſhall talk a little further with you; *Seeing there was no help, I did eate of the Tripe, at every other bit, much good may do you, quoth ſhe, eat heartily, and ſpare not I chewed it like him that was gnawing a piece of his own Boots; but down it muſt go. When ſhe thought I had eaten enough for that time, ſhe fell upon me in that manner, that I had much ado to keep that I had within me, which I was reſolved to do, leſt ſhe ſhould make me fry it again to my Supper.*

Having tired her ſelf with beating me, ſhe told me that this was not for the breaking of her Glaſſes, ſhe had another of another nature for that, ſince ſhe knew it was not a Dog, but a Bitch-Fox, that had done her all that miſchief. Whereupon ſhe drove me up ſtairs before her, and lockt me into a Room, till ſhe had breath to talk further with me.

I was ready to die with fear to think what ſhe intended to do with me; at nights approach ſhe came to me with one of her Maids, and having lockt the dore to them, they unſtript me, and naked as ever I was born, they tyed my hands to the Bed-poſt, *and laſht me with VVhip-cord, till ſhe had made me all over of a gore blood. Her Son hearing by the Maid how cruelly I was delt withal, adding further, that he wondred how his Mother could be ſo heard harted, as to tear my skin, Natural affection enforced him to pity me, and that pity began to increaſe that affection, which he hath had more than theſe two years for me; ſo that, as he confeſt to me afterwards there was no greater trouble to him, then that he cou'd not condole with me in my affliction. Having been confined two or three days to my Chamber, my Aunt was perſuaded to make further tryal of me,*

and

and if I proved not then anſwerable to her expectation, ſhe ſhould for ever diſcard me. Upon theſe terms I was releaſed, and found my Couzen overjoyed that I was enlarged. He was ſomewhat younger than my ſelf, about fifteen years old old, of an inclination very prone to love what was younthful or beautiful; and finding me very flexible to entertain his amorous propoſitions, followed me ſo cloſe, that he obtained what he deſired.

'Thus we continued ſome together, and knowing 'how covetous his Mother was, and not allowing him 'hardly any thing to ſpend, I ſtudyed how I aſſiſt him in 'his expence abroad: I was one day in the Shop, and 'looking into the Counter for ſomething, I found a 'board at the end of the Till, looſe, which taking up, 'I could eaſily put in my hand, and take out what 'Money I pleaſed; having now taken out the Board, 'I knew not what to do; for I faſtned it but very ſlen-'derly, neither could I do otherwiſe, having no time 'to do what I would. Wherfore in the morning ear-'ly, before my Aunt was up, I got into the Shop, and 'with a ſmall Perſer I boared a couple of holes quite 'through the end, and two ſides of the Box, and ſo 'with Wire I faſtned it, to my hearts content, but not 'ſo but I could looſen it again at my pleaſure. My 'heart leapt to think, how this project taking effect, 'neither I, nor my friend could want Money at any 'time. Could I have concealed this to my ſelf I would 'have done it, and ſo ſupplyed (as I thought conve-'nient) my Couzen with Money, the more to en-'gage his affection to me. But I was forc't to tell him 'thereof, (whom I knew as forward in any ſort of wick-

'wickedneſs as any body) becauſe he was continually
'in the Shop. Having given him an account of my
'projection, I thought he would have been tranſport-
'ed with joy, and was reſtleſs, till he had made an
'experiment; which having done, and finding my
'contrivance, an inexhauſtible Mine to him, I thought
'he did intend to lock me in his arms everlaſtingly.
'Now did our freedom daily increaſe, and nothing ob-
'ſtructed them but want of liberty to enjoy them.
'But, as what is violent, is ſeldom permanent; ſo
'muſt our delights have an end, and ſo much the
'ſooner, by how much they exceed in meaſure. Be-
'ing not ſatisfied with ſtealing a kiſs, or ſo forth in
'the day time, We pitcht upon a Night, when he
'ſhould run the hazard of coming into his Mothers
'Chamber where I lay in a Trundle-bed under her;
'and be with me all night: He watcht his opportu-
'nity, ſtaying up late, and I in purſuance of the de-
'ſign, had left the chamber door open, and ſo our
'deſires were accompliſht. But now (a miſchief
'on't) we were ſo ſhackled in the fetters of a laſting
'ſleep, that notwithſtanding my Aunt bawl'd to me I
'know not how many times, it being late in the morn-
'ing to riſe and look after her buſineſs, yet I made
'no anſwer; at laſt ſtarted out of the Bed, and ſtep-
'ping to mine, to ſee if I were not dead, found her
'Son incloſed in my Arms both faſt aſleep. But ſhe
'awakened us ſo haſtily out of our ſleeps, that we
'lookt like a couple of Bedlamites, and ſo confound-
'ed with ſhame, that we had not a word to ſay. To
'be ſhort, ſhe firſt reſolved to turn me out of doors,
'not caring whether I went with or without Cloaths;
'but then conſidering ſhe ſhould diſparage her Son,
by

'by ſhaming of me; concluded to ſend for the Maſter 'of the Veſſel we now are in, and after ſome diſcourſe 'I was commanded to go with him, glad I was to go 'any where to be out of her reach; her Son, hearing 'of my ſad ſentence, would have followed me, but 'was interrupted; however yeſterday, attempting 'by the way I had found out to ſupply me with Mo-'ney, he was catcht in the act by his Mother, and 'ſent immediately to Priſon, where I underſtand he is 'like to lie till we ſet Sail.

I was ſo attentive in the hearing what ſhe related befell her, that I did eat her words as they fell from her. To retaliate her kindneſs, I gave an account of what I had lately run through, at leaſt wiſe, as much as I thought convenient; and by this time the Seamen began to take notice of our private conference, and by our familiarity they had ſeen, gave their judgments openly, that they thought there would be a *Weſtminſter* wedding between us, before we ſhould arrive at our intended Port. Hereupon we broke up School, and deſcended ſtraight between Decks, there we found our Comerades tongues all imployed like a *Dover*-Court; I for my part was reſolved to be ſilent, that I might the better gather from them what they were, and what lewd things they had acted upon the Stage of this world.

But how often did I be-Aſs my Rogueſhip, calling my ſelf ten thouſand Fools for having ſo good an opinion of my Rogueries, (thinking them no other than the very quinteſſence of wit) when I heard them diſcourſe of what they had done, which they all did with more freedom, than a dying man would confeſs his Sins to his Ghoſtly Father. And ſo they might

very well do; for being paſt all ſhame (*perit cui pudor periit*) and the Law having paſt ſentence on them, they could not ſuffer again for the ſame, without a recommiſſion.

The Wind coming about fair, and we all ready, command was given to weigh the Ankor; juſt as it was a Peek, and our Fore-top-ſail looſe, and ſeeing then that there was no help but that I muſt go, I fully purpoſed to have leapt over-board (ſo attractive is our native Soil) had not the conſideration of my Eſtate aboard, with that of my Mis, which I muſt leave behind, pulled me back.

Whilſt I was thus ruminating with my ſelf, we had ſpread all our Canvas, the wind blowing freſh, we ſpoon'd away before it like an arrow out of a bow. Coming into the Ocean, I found my ſelf poſſeſt with a new Spirit, and if there was ever any ſuch thing as traſnmigration of Souls, certainly it was at that time, ſome new drown'd Sea mans Soul hovering on the Deep, took up its habitation in my body, entring in at my mouth as I gap'd for breath, which the ſwiftneſs of the Ships ſailing, and toſſing of the Waves together, had almoſt totally deprived me of. I was ſo nimble and ſo active, that if I ſaw any halling Sheets aft, or hoiſing of Sail, would be ſure to be with him; which our Maſter taking ſpecial notice of, encouraged me therein, ſo far, that venturing firſt into the tops, I afterwards upon it grew ſo ſold, that when occaſion required, *I* often helpt to furl a Sail, but being not my Crafts-Maſter, being more bold than skilful, one day I was in the Main-top, and getting aſtride the Yard-arm, (to make my ſelf the better acquainted with it) I dropt off into the Sea, and had we not been be-

becalmed, I had been drowned irrecoverably. Throwing me out a Rope, I got aboard, no more concerned with the danger I escaped from, than if I had been that while asleep in a Cabbin. My Master lookt on this accident as a certain Omen of my being a Sea-man, and thereupon made me his Cabbin-boy promising me when I had served him a time according to custom, he would advance me according to my deligence and fidelity, as for my ingenuity he questioned not.

We had not been above a Month at Sea, but by imploying all the leasure time I had among my Comrades, I had gained so intimate acquaintance, and so perfect a knowledge of them, that I shall endeavour to give you a Character of them; there was nineteen of them in all, besides my Mistress, whose late Adventures I have given you an account of; and therefore shall pass her by and only tell you what the rest were, but first, what their Professions are.

CHAP XI.

An account and Character of such who went with me me in our Voyage to a Plantation, viz.

ONe *Broken Tradesman,* 2 *Jilts,* 1 *Pretended poor Captain.* 1 *Counterfeit Libertine Minister,* 1 *Soldier of Fortune.* 1 *New Exchange Girl,* 2 *Button-makers.* 1 *Orange-Wench.* 3 *Crackt Maid-servants.* 1 *Stockin-Mender.* 4 *Common Prostitutes.* One whereof was a large *Folio,* two of them in *Octavo,* and one in *decimo sexto,* all loose in Sheets, of the first Edition imprinted at *London.* I might otherwise name the first a Ship of the first Rate,

an unwieldy bulky thing, which would require more men than a Kingdom can well ſpare to Man her, old and leaky too, and muſt be pumpt every hour to keep her above water. The other next two had been tight Friggots, and excellent Sailers; but length of time had ſo decayed their Hulks, that they were unfit for any thing but Fire ſhips; the laſt was a pretty Pinance, but damag'd much in her Rigging, and would ſerve for an excellent Pikeroon ſtill, having been from her Cradle taught the Art of Land-Piracy. But to begin firſt with my

Broken Tradeſman.

His Father lived in *Exceſter* in very good faſhion, being one of the principal of the City; and though he had a very good Trade of his own, yet he thought it very incompleat to that of *London*, and thither muſt his Son be ſent. A Confectioner for his Maſter was provided him; but he had not been with him ten weeks before the Confectioner found that he was half undone by this ſweet tootht Gutling; nay he ingenuouſly confeſt to me that his Pockets were continually cram'd with all ſorts of Sweat-Meats, as Pome-citron, Orange and Lemmon Pill, Comfits of all ſorts, or what ever Confections, as were dryed; and his reaſon was for ſo doing, leſt being ſent on an errand he ſhould loſe any time in the indulging his Palate: he did not ſo much as go to Bed unfurniſht, ſleeping with ſome ſweet thing or other in his Mouth, that he might dream of the reſt. His Maſter concluding that he ſhould be abſolutely undone if he kept him much longer, ſent for his Father, who coming up removed him from thence, and placed him with a Vintner, knowing experimentally that thoſe that are

ſweet

ſweet tooth, are ſeldom Drunkards. But the Gentleman could not make ſo much haſte to go out of town, as his Son did to be drunk; in ſeven days that he was in this Tavern, he was but five hours perfectly ſober, It was well he made ſo much haſte to ſhow his Inclination that he might not put his aged Father to the expence and trouble of another journey. His Father ſeeing he could devour trade ſo faſt, and leſt ſome ſuch ſhould ſwallow him up at laſt, reſolved to put him to one he could not eat,(yet one, too many have worn Thread-bare) a Sales man; he ſeemed diligent enough till his Father was gone out of Town, and then wanting what the Indulgence of a Father continually beſtowed upon him, he one morning early put on a very handſome Suit that fitted him, and taking along a very good *Bruxels* Chamblet Cloak (which he ſold) away he marcht into the Countrey, committing many *petit larcenies* by the way, reſolving (if it ſhould fall to his chance) to die as near his friends as he could. At *Huntington* he was apprehended for ſtealing a Silver Tumbler, but being known by ſome Relations he had in the Town, the buſineſs was huſht up, and he ſent home. His Father admired to ſee his Son return ſo ſoon after him, askt him the reaſon thereof, who craftily replyed, he could not live ſo far from his Parents. Though the old man was troubled that his Son ſhould diſappoint his expectations, yet he could not but ſhew himſelf a Dotard in acknowledging his Sons natural affection therein.

At laſt it was concluded on, that he ſhould follow his Fathers Trade of Mercery, which my young man did, till his Fathers death, which was about two years after, but how faithfully, I muſt leave to thoſe

Parents to conſider, who have brought their Children to ſhameful ends, and thereby have blemiſht the ſpotleſs Reputation of their Ancient Families, by not endeavouring to hinder the excurſions of ſuch debaucheries, as proceed from their known vicious conſtitutions. His Father leaving him his Houſe, Shop and Goods, he ſo apparel'd himſelf, and ſpent ſo largely, as in the exceſs neither had the conqueſt. Theſe, and his Extravagant Courtſhip made him the whole Town-talk. He had not hours enough in eight days to viſit his Miſtreſſes in a whole week, although he ſhould addreſs himſelf to one every hour of the day. His Love was ſo general, that he would have enjoy'd them all, but the Law bounding his boundleſs deſires to give himſelf that ſatisfaction, he is moſt prone unto, he was forc'd to elect one; it was ſtrange he could not chooſe one honeſt Woman out of ſo many; for ſhe matcht his Cock, ſhe proving more inclinable no Venery, then he to any other Vice. As he reacht to the poſſeſſion of all or none, ſo none at all could reach her full ſatisfaction.

The Marriage was but juſt conſummated, and they hardly warm in each others embraces, when he turned his poor Mother out of doors, bidding her go live elſewhere upon her Thirds, for they would have no Overſeers in their houſe, nor ſuch who ſhould continually diſturb their quiet with the tedious Lectures of Crab-tree morality. The Candle is now lighted at both ends, if he ſpent liberally with friends aboard, ſhe had thoſe at home to ſpend with and upon; and that ſhe might not come ſhort of him; if ſhe had heard he ſpent a Crown, ſhe would double it in her expence. For one half year two Taylors had nothing elſe

to

to do, but to make them new Garments; and when they and their Friends were together in a Tavern, all the Drawers in the house were little enough to tend them; so inconsiderately generous, that a Poetaster who could never arrive at the hight of a Ballad, presenting him with a hobbling non-sensical *Epithalamium*, he caused my ragged Kimer uncase immediately, and cloath'd him so, that he lookt rather like a gawdy Actor, than a Poet, bestowing over and above five pieces, then in his Drunkenness he might the more freely trumpet out his bounty. By these courses his Shop was altogether neglected, and few Commodities vended, but what his Wifes Paramours took upon an everlasting credit. Growing now weary of *Exceter*, and such vulgar Countrey delights, (as he was pleased to call them) he furnisht his Pockets with store of Money (having converted a round sum of Silver into Gold, away he rode for *London*; where being come, he omitted not any time which he might imploy either in places of pleasure or pastime. And being tired here too with the variety of his delights; and finding withal not above twenty pieces left, he mounts his Horse with an intention homewards but by the way, having some business, (as a Wench to see or so) at *Malborough* on the *Downs*, he was met with, and robb'd, and with a cut or two (for he resisted) he made a shift to get to the Town. He had behaved himself so loudly ill, that the report came thither, and those that would in his Fathers life time have trusted him with 500 *l.* would not now trust him with so many farthings; so that he was forc'd to sell his Horse, and go home on foot.

His Wife in the mean time had not been idle in her expences, rioting in that ſhameful manner, that that whole Town cryed out ſhame on her: thoſe deſerved reproaches they daily threw upon her, made her reſolve to lay hold on the opportunity of her Husbands abſence and ſecure what ſhe could to her own peculiar uſe, and quit the Town; to that intent ſhe conſulted with her chiefeſt favourite, (and by the way take notice there is no Whore ſo notoriouſly common, but ſhe keeps one whom ſhe loves above all others, that ſhall take the freedom to beat her, abuſe her, ſtrip her ſometimes when his Pimp-ſhip is in the humour, and will infallibly ſpend what 'ere ſhe gets if ſhe intends to keep her Fleſh and Bones from being under the Chirurgeons hands) I ſay conſulting him, he adviſed by all means to take ſome ſpeedy courſe for her ſelf-preſervation, it is an inſtinct infuſed into the natures of irrationals; and therefore certainly man cannot be without. He needed not uſe any arguments to perſwade her to that ſhe was already reſolved to put in execution; and therefore ſhe only deſired him to know how ſhe ſhould ſecure the Goods in the Shop. *Let that alone to me*, ſaid he, *I will take that charge upon me*; and that he might charm her into a conſent, they talkt that in private, which the colour of their Faces publickly diſcovered.

The night appointed being come, for the perfecting what they had propounded, the Gallant was ready punctually at his hour with three or four Porters, by the help of whom he quickly removed all the choice Goods or any that were worth Porterage to a place appointed. Having ſo done, he adviſed her to ſecure what Money and Plate there was in the

Houſe; this was done ſo ſilently, that the Servants of the Houſe were not awakened by any noiſe they made; there was not ſo much Money and Plate but it was portable enough between them; having thus contributed to the robbing her ſelf, away ſhe trudges with her friend to another place, than where he had ſent the Goods; and having provided an Horſe before for that purpoſe, in the morning early away they rode to *Plimouth*, about thirty miles diſtant, where having lodg'd her, and promiſing to return ſpeedily, takes a good quantity of Money with him, and was never by her heard of after.

Her Husband coming home, and finding all things in this condition, was about to hang himſelf, (and ſo he might, for few loved him ſo well as to hinder him from it, eſpecially now ſeeing there was no more good to be done with him) but comforting himſelf, that his Houſe was ſtill left ſtanding, he grieved very little; for he was ſo little acquainted hitherto with grief, that he knew not what it was. He had not reſted in it above one night, but he ſold it, and what Goods remain'd, and it was not two hours after before he was arreſted, and ſo forced to part with above three parts of what the Sale had brought him in, to diſcharge the Debts he owed in that City. It was not long after that all was gone, and in that juncture of time, his Wife returned with hardly a rag to cover that nakedneſs, ſhe had ſo often laſciviouſly expoſed to view. What became of her afterwards, I know not; but he to ſhun the daily flouts and inſupportable ſlightings of his Relations and *Quondam* Friends, footed it for *Barnſtable*, and rather than through deſpair deſtroy himſelf at home, he would try his for-

tunes

tunes by labouring in another Countrey. The next Perſons I am to treat of, are a Couple of

Jilts,

Fellows that muſt run through a many other faculties of an inferiour Claſs, before they can attain to the true knowledge of this profound Myſtery; and having obtain'd this, they commence Maſter of Arts; which Arts are divided into that of High-Padding, Low-Padding, Cloy-Filing, Bnng-Nipping, Prancers Prigging, Duds-Liſting, Rhum-Napping, Cove-Cuffing, Mort-Trapping, Stamp-Flaſhing, Ken-Milling, Jerk the Naskin, with many more of the quality.

Such were theſe two Jilts, who had they ſtaid longer in *London*, inſtead of taking ſhipping here, they would have taken Shippen at *Newgate*, and Sailed up *Holbourn*, and paſſing by the dangerous Rocks of St. *Giles*'s would irrecoverably have been caſt away at *Tiburn*.

I did not find by their diſcourſe any great matter of ingenuity, having not wit enough to practice any thing of their own deſigning; they were old ſeaſoned Rogues; and were content to tread in the ſame old Paths their Predeceſſors had trod in before, without making any new diſcovery. And therefore I ſhall give you an account only, that not daring to ſtay longer in *London*, they were conſtrained to betake themſelves to the Countrey. The week before the Sizes they came to *Exceſter*, ſetting up their Horſes at an Inn, they preſently (not to loſe time) walkt to ſee the City, and under that pretence to try what advantages they

they could make therein, went into ſeveral Taverns, and where they could not get civily into company they thought they might bubble, they rudely intruded, and had like to have been ſoundly baſted for their pains; they found that Gaming would not ſuit their purpoſe in that preciſe place, therefore the next day they reſolved to experience what Jilting would do; and that they might carry on their deſign with the leſs ſuſpition, they beſpoke a Diſh or two of Meat for Dinner in a Tavern, inviting the man of the Houſe and his Wife to eat with them, they called freely for Wine, and drank pretty ſmartly; at length they were left alone, one of them ſteps up the ſtairs, and gets into the Vintners Lodging Room, where ſeeing a large Trunk, he attempts to open it with his Pick-lock, (which they have of all ſorts and ſiſes from a Street Door to a Cabinet) being too long a fumbling about his buſineſs, the Vintner came up to his Comrade the mean time, and asking where his Friend was; the other replyed he was gone up to the Houſe of Office; *Nay, that cannot be*, replyed he, *for it is below in the Yard* and thereupon (his heart miſ-giving him) he ran up haſtily the ſtairs, and looking back ſaw him that he left below at the ſtair-head ready to go down, and the other that was above coming out of his Chamber, not knowing how to ſeize them both, he cryed out, *ſtop the Thief that is coming down*, and in the mean time clos'd in with him that was above and ſtruggling with him, he was forc'd to quit an Hundred Pound-Bagg, that the Jilt had got under his Arm, which made the Vintner then more eager to ſecure him: in ſhort, they were both ſecured and carried before a Juſtice; there needed no o-

ther

ther evidence to convict them, than a great bunch of thoſe Pick-locks found about them. Upon this they were committed, and that very Sizes (having miraculouſly before eſcaped buzzing in the fiſt) both ſentenced to be Tranſported.

Now give me leave to give you an account (if it be poſſible) of one that is every thing, yet nothing. By his Garb, both a Gentleman, and a Soldier too, and ſuch an one is this

Pretended (poor) Captain.

His Anceſtors by the Fathers ſide in a continued Line to him, have been well known to be remarkable Beggars ſome Centuries; I know not, but that they may draw their Original from King *Fergus*, or ſome other great *Iriſh Prince*; for to this day the meaner ſort of the Natives of *Ireland* had rather ſee their Children beg, than be mechanically imployed, by following ſome honeſt Trade, or Occupation. And that is the reaſon that ſo many ſerving-men, ſwarm from the middle and meaner ſort of them, learning to cringe when they are young, that they may beg with the better grace when they are old. His Grand-Father by an unhappy, or happy accident, when he was a Child, fell into the Fire, and ſo ſcorcht his face, that had you ſeen it, you would have ſworn it had been a young ſcorcht Devils-head half roaſted; I ſay by that advantage, (which others would call a diſadvantage) when he came to be of years, removing where he was not known, he gained daily by begging conſiderably, pretending that diſaſter came by powder, as he was couragiouſly fighting in the famous Battel of *Lepanto*

Lepanto; and which to confirm the belief, he had loſt a Leg by a conſounded Ulcer, which he pretended he loſt by a Cannon-ſhot, at the ſame time. By which means he had got ſufficiently to have maintained his Son not in idle courſes, if he had had the Grace to have rightly uſed it; but he coming of Age, ſpent that in a Month, which his Father had got in twenty ſcorching Summers, and as many cold benumming Winters, ſcorning to degenerate from the Ancient practice of his Predeceſſors; and like a Crafts-maſter, purchaſed a Sea-mans old ſuit of Apparel, with his Red Cap, and had ſo rolled himſelf in Pitch, that he might have ſerved a whole City for a general Antidote in a Contagion. He begg'd up and down the Countrey, (pretending to go home,) under the notion of being caſt away, and had loſt all; and therefore deſired the Charity of well minded People, that it might be a means to carry him to his friends and acquaintance. He had learn'd Sea-termes of Art, and applyed them very well in all his wonderful relations. Coming to his Quarters at night, after two or three deep fetcht ſighs, he would in general complain of his hard fortune, giving ſome ſmall hints of what conſiderable ſums he loſt this laſt Ship-wrack; then as if he corrected himſelf for ſo doing in the diſcovery of his miſery, he would ſay, *well, it is but a madneſs and a great folly to grumble at the hand of Providence. We muſt ſubmit to Diſpenſations.* Theſe ſad Notes coming from his Religious Organ-pipe, ſounded ſo lowdly in the ears of his Landlady, that ſhe tuned them ſo among the Neighbourhood, that the room wherein he was, fill'd preſently.

He had an excellent faculty in telling a doleful ſtory,

ſtory, and would Limn the horrour of Ship-wrack ſo to the Life, that the womens eyes about him dropt as faſt as Water out of a Cullender; after this fell a ſhore of two pences, ſingle pence, half pence, *&c.* By this ſubtlety he never wanted Mony, Victuals, ſtrong Drink, nor good Lodging. And by the help of a good Memory as I am informed he travailed in and about *England*, begging in this manner, nine years, and never came in to a Town twice.

Our poor Captain the Son of this maunding Seaman, (that never ſaw the Ocean, and therefore could hardly be otherwiſe Ship-wract, than againſt a Whipping-poſt, or the Gallows) had another Spirit, whoſe Soul had neither communication with, nor relation to the meanneſs of his Fathers; for from his Childhood he begg'd as the Orphan of a wealthy Merchant, whoſe Eſtate was embezel'd by the avarice of his Guardian, and ſince laviſhly ſpent by the profuſe prodigality of his Son, ſince dead. That now having neither Parents nor Friends left living, he was expoſed to this miſerable way of craving the benevolence of the charitable. He made a ſhift to live after this manner till he was fifteen years of Age; but the People noting him to be a luſty Lad, threatned if he would not work, to ſend him to *Bridewel*; that word ſo ſtartled him, that he was abſolutely frighted out of that begging humour. Hearing at that inſtant the Drums beat for Voluntiers in ſome forreign expedition, he liſted himſelf, and inſtead of Advance Mony, had Shoos, Stockins, Hat, and Coat, Sword and Belt, with what elſe was requiſite for a Soldier. And now he ſhewed clearly what blood he had in him, and

that

that his Mother had the greateſt ſhare in his Generation. For when ſhe was in her Ale, (as ſhe often would be) ſhe never gloried nor boaſted of any thing more, then that her Husband was a Soldier at *Tilbury* Camp, and that loſing his Thumb by firing his own Muſquet, her Majeſty gave him a Penſion of a maimed Soldier, that if he begg'd after-wards, it was no diſgrace, being ſo miſerably diſenabled from working.

This Sprightly young Soldier, being thus accoutred beyond his own or any bodies expectation elſe, ramm'd in the Stones of the Street by his ſtrutting to ſome purpoſe, leaving not any place of the City unviſited, that he might ſhew his Gallantry, eſpecially ſuch places he before had begg'd in. You could not have affronted him worſe, than to call him by what name his Mother gave him, (for I queſtion, whether he was chriſtian'd) and would be as ready to draw to vindicate his Honour. But the Wind ſerving fair, and all things ready, ſetting ſail, they arrived in ſafety at their Port. What ſervice he did in that expedition, I could not gather from him, (undoubtedly it was his modeſty that hindred him, rather deſiring to have ſome other Mouth to proclaim his worth than his own) but this he confeſt, that his often hiding himſelf when any Party was commanded to march out of the Garriſon, occaſioned his Officers to tie him ſo often Neck and Heels, that he thought he ſhould go double as long as he lived, and that his Breech was grown ſtupidly ſenſleſs by often riding the wooden Horſe. However, he was conſtrained to tarry here ſix years; but at length he grew ſo tired with watching

ing

ing once in four dayes, and ſo ſcar'd with the dangers the frequent Alarms acquainted his ears with, once in ſix weeks at leaſt, that he reſolved rather to venture a hanging by his own fellow Soldiers, than run the hazard of being ſhot by his enemies; and ſo watching his opportunity, got into a Veſſel bound for *England*, and came away, not affording thoſe he left behind, ſo much as a farewel; but being far enough off the Shore, cryed out aloud, *Harm watch, Harm catch.* Landing at *Plimouth*, he bought him an ordinary red Scarf, and made it into a Sling to carry his hand in, which had as many Plaiſters on it, as are uſed in an Hoſpital a week, ſowing it to his Shoulder, and tying a large bow knot on it; with a Sword by his ſide, and a laced Hat, that he had purchaſed at ſecond hand, he walk'd the Streets, and had the impudence to addreſs himſelf to the Governour of the Town, in this, or the like manner.

Although I have not the Honour to be acquainted with you, Great Sir, in whoſe Perſon dwells (as I hear) all the Virtue and Valour of ſlain Engliſh Heroes, *by a Tranſmigration; yet I am not unknown to the* African *part of the Macrocoſme, where my ſingle Sword hath eaten its way through thouſands, and hath afterwards drank it ſelf into a ſurfeit, with the blood of thoſe Hell-dyed Infidels. My forward valour ſoon rewarded my unknown Worth, and for no other reaſon, than that I was thought fit to command the Deſtinies, having ſo great a power over Life and Death, I was made a Captain. At firſt, the great care I had to preſerve my own, made me expoſe my ſelf as their Target, to guard them from their enemies Arrows, ſo that in*

one

one Battel, (wherein there was threescore thousand men of the adverse party, there was but three hundred of them escap'd with life to inform their friends of their Countreys loss,) I say, in that barbarous conflict I return'd home, as thick stuck with Arrows, as a porcupine with Quills; afterwards my Name served to fright the Rogues, without fighting a stroak. But the long absence from my own Countrey, possest me with so great a desire of seeing that blessed Soil, that gave me breath, I resolved to acquit my Command, and happy in this opportunity of tendring my Person and Services at the feet of a Soul, so magnanimous as your self.

Having finished his Formal bumbastical-hyperbolical Speech, the Governor was at a stand, what to do with this mighty *Garagantua*, having almost disenabled his tongue from speaking, by biting it e'ne through, to contein himself from laughing out right; but considering with himself, promised him at last, that he would Muster him in his own Company for the present, till he could find out something more suitable to his worth and quality, and for the present gave him some Money, which our Captain Getting, drunk with all that night in the Company of some Officers into which he had intruded himself, and taking the liberty of undervaluing some of them in his prodigious cracking, was soundly kick't for all his lame hand. But such was the Fortune of War, that our Captain had not trailed a Pike above a Month, before he stole a Chamber-Pot, two Quart-pots, Flaggons, with some other Pewter, and sold them at another Ale-house in the Town; with the Money he got

got drunk, and coming home to his Quarters; his Landlady taxing him with the Theft, made no more ado, but firſt abuſing him in all the moſt opprobrious terms that a Whore could invent, that had ſerved three ſeven years Apprentiſhips to a *Billings-gate* Fiſh-woman, he then manfully beat her, and in that manner, that ſhe was forc'd to cry out Murder. Neighbours coming in, ſeiz'd my valiant Captain, and in that pickle he was in, ancarried him before the Governour, who ſeeingon him in that drunken condition, ſent him to the Mainguard, where he lay all that night as round as a Ball. The next Morning he was tryed by a Council of War, and finding him a Counterfeit, and that he was nothing but a commixt piece of Debauchery and Villany, condemned him to run the Gauntlet, which he did on the *Hoe* of *Plimouth*, through his own Company, and another drawn up thither for that purpoſe; and afterwardat the old Town-gate, had his Swordbroken over his head, and ſo caſhiered.

This uſuage was enough to make any one hate to be a Soldier as it did him, for he reſolved to ſettle to his Trade, yet he liked very well the name of Captain, and getting far enough off from his diſgracing place; he ſo ſhaped his deſign, that he queſtioned not but that this Title would be very advantagious: and to make a tryal how it would prove, he applyed himſelf to a Gentlemans houſe, (at that time when Loyalty to our Lawful Prince was accounted Treaſon againſt the Common-wealth) and underſtanding by inquiry the name of the Perſon, and that he was a ſtrong Cavilier, (as they then call'd them) and a great lover of all ſuch, and knock'd at the door, and aſk'

to ſpeak with the maſter of the Houſe, naming him, he being informed therewith readily came, and my Captain was as ready himſelf thus, in a low voice. to addreſs

Sir, Report renders you a lover of your King, and ſuch as have ſuffered for his Sacred Majeſties ſake. My Father was a Colonel, and his Loyalty he could not better expreſs than by dying in his Majeſties Service at Edge-hill; *to revenge my Fathers death, and ſhew that I had the ſame blood running in my Veins, I have not only ventured my Youth upon any hazard, the boldeſt Cavalier ever yet attempted, but ſince, I have had my Eſtate ſequeſtred too, and dare not own my name.*

This Forgery took ſo good effect, that it produced him forty ſhillings, with directions to go to another Gentleman of the like Principles, about ten miles diſtance; where addreſſing himſelf in the ſame or like terms, the pretence took effect there too. Now did he buy himſelf a Sword, and getting a white Cap on his Head, pretended himſelf ſick too, as well as maimed; by which means he pickt up a great deal of money; the Rogue was grown ſo Covetous, and was reſolved not to loſe his labour where ever he came; if he had not any money given him, he would infallibly ſteal ſomething in lieu thereof. Coming at length to the houſe of a perſon of Quality, he addreſt himſelf there as he had done elſe-where, the Knight after he had given him money, commanded ſome of his Servants to carry him into the Buttery; they knowing by the reſpects their Maſter ſhewed him, he muſt be a Royaliſt, drank a Health to the King, and by degrees to each of the Royal Progeny, not leaving

out ſome of the Nobility, that had been moſt eminently ſerviceable to the King, and by that time there was none (not exempting the Butler) but had his doſe; my Captain taking the advantage of their diſordered ſenſes, was not contented with a Bowl, but pickt up a ſilver Salt too, which one more ſober than the reſt obſerving, let him go out of the Gate before he apprehended him; and ſeeing that he was reſolved to march off with them, ſeized him, and drew him back again into the Court-yard, where demanding from him what he had ſtoln, the Captain denyed the Fact, with many bitter imprecations, which gathered the Servants about him, who ſearching him found the theft, who if their Maſter had not interpoſed, they would have knockt this Impoſter in the head. He knew that the Law would puniſh him ſufficiently, and being a Juſtice of Peace, cauſed his Clerk to write his *Mittimus*, and ſo was ſent to *Exeter*-Goal, where he continued till Sizes, and then received the ſame Sentence, that had paſt upon the Jilts before.

Now ſince I have deſcribed one counterfeit that abuſed and robb'd the Countrey, under the pretence of Loyalty; give me leave to Characterize another counterfeit (the worſt of the two) who under the Cloak of Religion hid his debaucheries, whilſt he deceived and deluded the ignorant, eſpecially the Female Sex, with his lowd, long, and impertinent Praying, and falſe Doctrine, and that was the

Counterfeit Libertine Miniſter.

It is no wonder that he lived (as we do ſtill) in a ſtaggering

gering age, for the fall of *Adam*, broke the bones of his Children, and crippled his poſterity, ſo that we are both blind in our Judgments, and lame in our Practiſes. At firſt he was made perfect, which was intimated by being brought into the world naked, to ſignifie that the great Former of all things was not aſhamed of his Workmanſhip; but when the Devil ſent erroneous Tenents, attended with damned Practices into the world, he adviſed the Brochers and Profeſſors thereof to cover their deformity, with the Mouth of tenderneſs of Conſcience; but were their skins are as tongh as their Conſciences, and their Fleſh as hard as their Hearts, they would be both Ax and Halter-proof; they might laugh at the Block, and defie the Gallows.

This religious *Proteus*, this *Heteroclite* in Divinity, (for he was deficient in what he ought to do, or believe, and redundant in what he ought not,) when he firſt appeared in a Tub, or a thing like a Pulpit, he was, (as he acknowledged,) like *Æſop*'s Jay, in a dreſs of borrowed Feathers, preaching the Works of other men, which muſt needs be the worſe for coming out of his defiled Mouth, as a Shirt worn by a polluted Body. He mangled the modern Divines more barbarouſly, than an Executioner a Traytors Body; not forbearing to give old *Priſcian* a knock on the bald Crown. The height of his Eloquence conſiſted in railing againſt Popery, calling Epiſcopacy the Siſter of the Whore of *Babylon*, running on in his Preachment like a mad-Dog, foaming and open-mouth'd, yelping at the Honourable Clergy in general, and biting his Brethren the Sectaries, whom he would have his Auditory believe are as mad as himſelf; but having

run himſelf out of Breath, what a ſtumming, and a ſpitting there was, and by the blowing his Noſe, made many a filthy Parentheſis; having concluded his Sermon, he Prayed, ſhutting his eyes, and would rather utter non-ſence, and tautologis, than uſe any ſtudied Form. All being finiſhed, he ſteals out demurely out of the Meeting-houſe with his Sword by his ſide (a Captain and an Independent) and though he neither obeyed Chriſts Commiſſion, or wore his Livery, yet would be accounted one of his Menial Servants. Being got out, one would thank him for the great pains he took; another invited him to Dinner; a third, a fourth, fifth, letting them all alone till the tenth made his proffer: at laſt, where he thought he ſhould have the beſt entertainment, there he would expreſs the acceptance of the proffer. He could not go amiſs for his Supper; and to retaliate their kindneſs, before the Cloth was laid, he would beſtow on them a ſleeping Prayer of an hour and half, moſt commonly proportioning the time to that of Supper-dreſſing. Certainly his deſign therein was like the *Scribes* and Phariſees, who had never been condemned for long Prayers, had they not been uſed as ſo many Graces before their curſed Meals of Orphans Eſtates, and Widows Houſes. He endeavoured to make his intereſt good among the Females, knowing how prevalently powerful they are commonly over their Husbands Inclinations, which he practiſed with ſo much craft and cunning; firſt poſſeſſing them ſtrongly with a good eſteem of his Holy Life and Converſation, that they verily believed one word of his would either Saint them or Reprobate them, when he pleaſed; which he perceiving, reſolved to play the Gypſy with them,

them, telling good fortunes to none, but ſuch as croſt his hand with a piece of Silver; that is to ſay, in private Meetings and Conferences, having occaſion to ſpeak of ſuch, and ſuch, it lay in his power then to ſay that ſuch a one to his knowledge is a precious Saint, a conſtant hearer of the word, having an excellent gift in Prayer, or ſuch a one is lately fallen, ſhe is ſtarted aſide into the by-paths of Sin and Iniquity, *&c.* So that you ſee by Him, as well as by the Pope, the People might be canoniz'd for Money.

But imagining this Faction was not ſo powerful, nor encouraging as the *Anabaptiſts*; and finding that the fading Gourds of his fooliſh hopes and expectations of perferment began to wither; he in downright terms fell about telling his Congregation, they muſt be Re-baptized, or they muſt not hope for Salvation. He was amongſt the *Anabaptiſt* ſo long, till (notwithſtanding he was ſo highly cryed up for his powerful teaching,) he had got ſeven young Siſters with Child in leſs than a year, and it was ſhrudely ſuſpected that he had made four of his Brethren Cuckolds. Therefore he was by the voice of the whole Congregation excommunicated, and delivered unto Satan. His hand being now in, he was reſolved to try all, till he might advance himſelf by one. So that he might not be beholding to any. In this juncture the good old Religion ſo long raked up in the duſt, began to ſhew its heavenly countenance again, whoſe glorious light theſe Owls and Batts durſt not look upon.

It is obſerved, that it hath been the faſhion to wear yellow Ruffs; but after one Mrs. *Turner* a notoriouſly wicked Woman, was hang'd with one of them

about her neck, that Mode not only vaniſht, but became ſhamefully ridiculous; So this our Hypocrite ſeeing ſo many of his Brethren (who had poyſoned more with their Doctrines, than Mrs. *Turner* with her Potions,) go to the Gallows wearing the Liveries of a Sectarian, thought it more eligible to turn Cat in the Pan, and become an *A la mode* Epiſcopalian, than let the fowl Fiend play the Hobgoblin with him, as he had done many, tumbling ſuch in the Mire, who lately ſat in the Saddle, toſſing others till their necks were broken, and crippling others both in their Eſtates and Opinions.

Down with all ſuch, let them no longer ſtand,
Baſe Caterpillars *that conſum'd the* Land,
Who rent the Common-prayer-book and Lawn-ſleeves,
And made the houſe of God a den of Theeves.
And may the Sacred Pulpit e're be free,
From ſuch Quack-ſalvers *in* Divinity.

Every one knowing how great a Changling this fellow was in Religion, no body believed a word that he ſaid; nor would either truſt or imploy him upon any account whatſoever; ſo that he was neceſſitated to take this courſe, or do worſe, by adding one more to the number of *Barbadoes* Inhabitants; neither did he want a Volunteer abroad, upon the ſame deſign, a luſty young ſprightly fellow, a Man both of wit and courage, though of ſlender Fortunes, and calls himſelf,

A

A Souldier of Fortune.

He was well born, and gentilely educated, who who lived in a pamper'd condition till the age of seventeen; at which time his Father dying, the Estate fell to the Elder Brother, who mounting into his Fathers (yet warm) seat, could not conceal his *Turkish* cruel dispostion against his Brethren; yet though the Law held his hands from cutting off their Heads, his austere countenance, and severe carriage towards them, did notwithstanding cut off their hopes from ever expecting more than barely what their Father left them in Money. Two hundred Pounds was this Gentlemans Portion, who returning it to *London*, soon followed after, where equipping himself suitable to the *Grandeur* of the Place, and Gallantry of the Persons he came acquainted with, he spent his time in things so agreeable to his constitution, that his thoughts never climb'd any other Heaven, than this his imaginary one, which he wisht might ever continue. He scattered his Money apace, and how could he otherwise; for his Exchange was a Tavern, his Lodging a Brothel; his *Hide-park*, a Gaming ordinary, his Study, a Play-house; his Associates, Bully Ruffins; his Mistresses, Courtezana's; had his constant attendants, Pimps, Parasites, Spongers, Wheedlers, and such like. The Devil's in them all, if one was not enough to impoverish a Mint, or drain a Silver-mine, though it reacht to the Centre of the Earth.

By this you may imagine his two hundred Pounds could not last long; his Hangers on perceiving his Money was at the last gasp, fell off, being loath to see so

ſo dear a friend depart. He was now left Moneyleſs, and Friendleſs, and, what came neareſt his heart, he was jeared, and flouted by ſuch he had formerly liberally expended on. As he paſt the ſtreets, he hath heard his old Comrades ſay one to the other: *There goes ſuch a one, ſhall we call him, and drink a Glaſs of Wine together? No, no, let him go, pox on him; he hath not a Penny in his Pocket to bleſs himſelf withall; he had Money once, but like a Fool, he could not keep it*; which made him often repeat this true ſaying of the Poet;

Non habet infœlix paupertas durius in ſe
Quam quod ridiculos homines facit——

Were it not for that, Poverty is a property we might pride in; nor would the Philoſopher voluntarily have Shipwrakt his Fortunes, but that he might purchaſe thereby that glorious Motto; *Omnia mea mecum porto. Diocleſian* ſo great an Emperor, that *Lætus* parallels him with *Jupiter*; nay, he allow'd himſelf to be call'd Lord, and God, and would be ſued unto, as a God; but having at laſt tryed ſufficiently the vanity of his own vain glory, he freely without compulſion, laid aſide his Empire, and returned to a private life; being ſollicited afterwards by ſeveral to reſume his former Power, and Glory, he abſolutely refus'd it, ſaying, *Did you ſee the Herbs ſet with my own hands in my Garden at* Salona, *you would think me too good a Gardner, to become a miſerable Emperour.*

There was nothing grated on his Spirit more than to

to be ſlighted in this his low condition, by ſuch as he had ſupported from ſinking into the Earth: and that he might not longer be afflicted in this manner, he projected ſeveral wayes, how he might imploy himſelf in ſomething, that might remove him from the ſcorn and reproach of the world. His credit was quite worn out, owing ſomething in all the Taverns and Ale-houſes that he was acquainted withal, through the whole City, and would have ran farther in their Debt, but that they not only hindred him from ſo doing, but likewiſe threatned him, by taking a courſe for what he owed already. This made him remove his Quarters to another remote quarter of the City. His Cloaths were ſo good as that they gained him credit for a Months Lodging and Dyet, in which time, he wrote ſeveral Ballads, which he ſold in the *Old Baily*, getting for the worſt half a Crown or three ſhillings; but his Chapmen finding themſelves loſers by his works, did ſo revile and vilifie him the next time they ſaw him, that he was reſolved to write no more, for it ſeems he had not writ Non-ſenſe enough to pleaſe the Commonalty; he had taken too much pains to expreſs his wit, and that ſpoiled all; ſoaring ſo high, the dim ſighted vulgar could not diſcern him.

One day walking abroad Melancholy to think his firſt deſign was fruſtrated, he fell accidentally into the company of four or five, ſo unſuitably or antickly habited, that he verily thought they could not have cloathed themſelves more out of faſhion, than if for ſo doing, they had conſulted all the Brokers in *Long-Lane*, or *Houns-ditch*. At length by their toning of ſeveral ſcraps of Plays, and the whining out of Lovers parts,

parts, he judged them to be Players of the worſt Edition, and that wanting ſome to compleat their number, they endeavoured to perſwade him to make one of their Stroling Company.

They needed not many words to perſwade one, that knew not what to do with himſelf; wherefore, he readily conſented to their propoſitions. Viewing them well, and their Habits, he abſolutely concluded, that their Company had been lately broken, and that they had ſhared houſe-hold-ſtuff, every one taking what he could lay his hands on of the Properties, (though very improper to wear publickly) with which, neceſſity ſince hath forc'd them to cover their own nakedneſs. However, he was reſolv'd to go through, with that he promiſed, and ſo calling for what was to pay, being one and twenty pence among them all, they made a hard ſhift to pay the ſhot within three-half-pence, and ſo marcht off. They provided him a lodging, where they all lay that night, and the next morning, their undertaker came, who ſummoning them all into a large Room, there appeared alſo three or four Women, who with the reſt rehearſed their parts in *Actæon* and *Diana*. After reherſal the undertaker being informed what our *Soldier of Fortune* was, came and ſaluted him kindly, and welcom'd him into their Society, and giving him his part to ſtudy, carried him to the Tavern, with ſome of the three-quarter-ſharers, and made him drunk at his initiation.

Having ſtudied *Actæon* and *Diana*, *Jack Swabber*, *Simkin in the Cheſt*, *Miles the Miller*, *Simpleton the Smith*, with divers other drolling farces, away

way they ſtrolled into the Countrey, ſome in a Coach (by reaſon of the Properties they carried with them,) others on Foot of the meaner ſort, ond ſome on Horſe-back; had the moſt intelligent met them, it would have puzzled him to have told what they were. The firſt thing they did when they came to a Town, was to acquaint the Mayor thereof with their intent, producing their Patent which authoriz'd them. Having the grant of the Mayor, moſt commonly they were permitted the Town-Hall to play in. At firſt, commonly they had uſually ſuch great audiences, and got ſo much Money, that it undid them, for it made them inſolent, idle, careleſs, always drunk and continually quarrelling, ſo that the Town and Countrey growing weary of them, their poverty alſo made them weary of the Town. The next place they came at, it may be, there they would endeavour to regulate thoſe diſorders; but no ſooner were they flusht, but they fell into the like confuſed Chaos. There was ſeldom a Rehearſal in the morning, in which there was not ſome ſcuffle; ſometimes altogether by the ears, all engaged in a Quarrel, but none knowing the cauſe of it. Their differences moſt commonly did ariſe from ones axalting his own worth, by the undervaluing anothers, ſaying that ſuch a one had a greater ſhare than he, though he deſerved more; that ſuch a fellow had a noble part, when he had that of a Servant, whereas he better merited to be a Prince, than the other a Foot-Boy; *Damn me*, ſaid another, that Fellow that ſpeaks now hath no Soul; a Parrot would be taught to ſpeak better, and underſtand more than he; a Baboon treads a Stage a thouſand degrees beyond him; See but yonder Horſe-

faced

fac'd Lover, is he fit to act that part with that hunting face of his? it is enough without the help of a Vizard to fright his Miſtreſs into Convulſion fits, or make a young Woman miſcarry, that hath not half gone her time. If reviling one another would not put them together by the ears, there was another expedient would infallibly do it. There was one well ſtricken in years, yet far more amorous or ſalacious than the younger, and when ſhe found not her accuſtomed pleaſures, ſhe judg'd that one of thoſe three, had ſtoll them from her; when jealouſie had poſſeſt her of that Opinion, ſhe ne're capitulated with them otherwiſe, than with her hands, which ſhe uſed ſo nimbly together with the nails, that had not black Patches been in Faſhion, I know not how without ſhame they could have played. The Men on the other ſide, being known Rivals to one another, could not forbear ſhewing their animoſities, (as their parts permitted them) one being run into the hand, another through the Arm, making a real Tragedy of what was but pretended. Their Stock of Clothes was very ſmall ſo that a Parſon was forc'd to Act in a Loyars Gown, inſtead of one that was Canonical; a Biſhop, with a Shepherds Crook, inſtead of a Crozier, and a Cuſhion ſo dented, that the Corners might be more perſpicuous, inſtead of a Miter; they wanted a Target, and knew not what to do, at laſt, the invention of one of the wittieſt, helpt them to a large Wooden Tray, and nailing a piece of Tape to the ſides within, ſerved rarely well, The Actors were few, wherefore ſome Acted three or four parts, nay one Acted two parts at once upon the Stage, the King, and the Nobleman; when as a Nobleman in a long mourning Cloak

Cloak, (for they could get nothing elſe, that could néarer repreſent him by) he ſpake to an *Indian* Gown that lay in a Chair, with a Paſt-board Crown that lay upon it, all bedawbed with yellow, (and I know not what Colours) by a Countrey Sign-Painter, to make it look like. Having ended his Speech, he threw off the long Cloak, and putting on the Crown and Gown, he then as a King returned an anſwer to the Cloak, I mean the Nobleman, making a many changes, till the conference was over. The Nobleman *i. e.* the Cloak, being taken off the Stage, that is, having made his *exit*, it was the Kings Cue to ſeat himſelf a while, to give audience to a perſon, that had great concerns with his Majeſty, whoſe Speech being long and his memory treacherous, he hadno t gone a quarter through his Speech, but that he was irrecoverably out, paſtall prompting; the King not knowing how to help, and the audience eagerly expecting his going on, at laſt it came into his head, ingenuouſly to tell him that he had heard enough, he would hear the reſt within, by which means the Play went on.

One Market-day, (which was the chief time they pitcht on) they Acted a Play, (by the invitation of ſome Gentlemen in a Tavern,) in which there were two which fought on the ſtage, which were ſuppoſed Clowns, and were to baſte one another to ſome purpoſe. A Countrey Gentleman being there preſent, and having never ſeen a play, but this Acted once before, and ſeeing them fight again in the ſame manner, as they had done before, ſteps haſtily down ſtairs, and bringing up a Bottle of Wine in his hand, interpoſes between them; telling them they ſhould not thus bear a grudge one to the other, but that they ſhould

ould be friends; and to that end he had brought a Bottle of Wine, that they ſhould ſhake hands, and drink to each other, and would not ſtir, off the place, till he had ſeen them ſo do, and go too, off a ſeveral way. That Scene was ſpoyled, however they played on, and coming to the third Scene in the fourth Act, theſe Fellows were to enter again; the Gentleman ſeeing them together, and facing each other, ran from his ſeat to them again; ſwearing that he that gave the firſt blow, ſhould beat him too; *What*, ſaid he, *cannot we be quiet here, but you two Loggerheads muſt ſpoil the Play?* This put the whole audience into ſuch laughter and confuſion, that the Play was forced to be deferred till another days action.

They ſtaid not long in a place, the People being tired with ſuch coſtly novelties as they call'd them, which made them ramble every where. Coming to *York*, they had the ſame ſucceſs at firſt, as they found elſe where, but had like to have been ſcar'd out of their wits. For one day acting a Play, wherein the King of *Scots* was to be murdered barbarouſly by his Subjects, and having intimation of the ſuddain coming of the Aſſaſſinates, condoled his own unhapppy Fate, and condemns the treachery of his Subjects proceedings; is there no hope of Life, is there never a true Scot, that now dares ſtand by me? A Scot there preſent, ſeeing the murderers came in with their drawn Swords, cryed out, *there is one left ſtill, my neen ſel, yar een Country-man. Let the Deel fill my wem with ſmaw ſteans, if I make not the Laons eat my Sward as ſmaw as* Saunies *durch.* And thereupon drew his broad

broad Sword, and at them he came as deſperately reſolved, as if they had been real enemies; and notwithſtanding the King intreated him to be patient, he grew more furious, and would have proſecuted them to death, had not his ſuppoſed Majeſty held him in his arms, till they had made their eſcape. Not long after this they were invited to act at a Gentlemans houſe in the Countrey, where they acted their parts ſo badly, by ſtealing ſeveral pieces of Plate, that ſome of them had like to have acted their laſt; Our Soldier of Fortune fearing by their ends, he might come to his laſt, fled away privately to *London*; where he betook himſelfto his Pen again, altering the Scene of his former deſign. Obſerving what large encouragement ſome received from their Dedications, he reſolved to make tryal of ſcribling too: the firſt that he wrote was indifferently well accepted of, it being an *Hodge podge* of Tranſlation, Tranſcription, Collection, and his own Compoſition; he Dedicating it to a Perſon of Quality, was largely rewarded; had he ſtuck here, he had done well, but being infected with the baſe ingratitude of Mercenary Scriblers, he preſented his Book to at leaſt twenty more, with the ſame Dedication, the name onely altered, which brought him into ſo great diſ-eſteem amongſt ſuch as would have been his conſtant Benefactors, that ever after they would never accept of his Preſentations

And now poor Gentleman, not knowing what to do, walking melancholy in the *New-Exchange*, he took ſpecial notice of a young Trader, who eyed him as much, as he her (for he was a handſom proper young man, and had cloaths on his back, a Gentleman

needed not to be aſhamed to wear,) they gazed at each other a pretty while at a diſtance, but Love quickly brought them nearer together. For having money in his Pocket, he approacht the Shop with a pretence to buy ſome Linnen, where having ſeen ſome of ſeveral ſorts, he bought ſome, the better to engage her in a diſcourſe. He askt her whether ſhe was ſingle, and whether that was her Shop? ſhe anſwered, ſhe was married, and therefore had nothing ſhe could call her own. *How Madam*, (ſaid he) *I cannot doubt but that you have many Virtues, which you may juſtly call your own; you have Beauty too, and admirable outward parts.* I thank your good opinion, *Sir*, (ſaid ſhe) but I look upon her as unworthy to deſerve the name of an owner, that either cannot, or durſt not give what is in her poſſeſſion: *though you cannot give, Madam, yet you may ſo diſpoſe of that beautious mirrour of your Sex, your Face, or what elſe you have, as that the frequent loan thereof, may be eſteemed equal to the gift.* She was quick of apprehenſion, and underſtood his drift, and though ſhe anſwered him not, yet her ſmiles ſhewed a ſufficient ſatisfaction to his amorous diſcourſe, and her bluſhes bid him do if he durſt. To be ſhort, he won her ſo abſolutely to himſelf, in a little time, that ſhe had nothing in her Power, which ſhe did not freely give him, till her Husband had almoſt nothing left, and ſuſpecting the infidelity of his Wife, watcht her ſo narrowly, that her Enamorato enjoyed her rarely, and ſeldomer had his wants ſupplyed.

Now was he forced to look out again, but it was not long before he was informed of a Maid that was very

very well to paſs in the world, ſomewhat ancient, and had ſhe not had ſome few natural deformities, ſhe had never lived a Maid ſo long, for ſhe was long nos'd, thin lipt, beetle-brow'd, ſhort neckt, bunch-backt, and hopper-arſt. This diſmaid not him, knowing ſhe had Mony to mak all good; and ſo with a little Court-ſhip; (ſhe being already raviſht to think, (her hopes of marrying having long ſince taken leave of her,) ſhe ſhould be joyned to a young man, and a handſome man to;) I ſay the Marriage was quickly hudled up: I did not hear they had many quarrels the firſt week; but not many weeks paſt over their heads. before his extravagancy, and her covetouſneſs, could not agree. Beſides, ſhe grew intolerable jealous, (as moſt do who are conſcious of their own imperfections,) and ſhewed ſo many of her damned qualities, that he lived a helliſh life with her; had he not been a fool, he might have known before what ſhe was.

She had better been quiet, for the more unquietly he lived at home, the more jocundly he ſpent abroad; till in fine he ſpent all, ſo that he reſolved to leave her, and return to his former Miſtreſs, who is now abroad, I mean.

The New-Exchange-Girl.

She was born in *Lancaſhire*, and coming up to to *London* with Carrier to get a Service, it was ten to one ſhe had not been pickt up by ſome Bawd, they continually laying wait at all the Inns in the Town,

for the coming up of handſome Girles. It was the hap of a Semſtreſs in the *New-Exchange* to meet with her: and ſeeing her to have a well featured, and well coloured Countenance, took ſo great a liking to her, that ſhe took her home with her. She knew well enough what ſhe did, being not ignorant, that a handſome young Girl in a Shop, will attract as many Beauty hunters to her ſhop, as ſweet things will draw Flies to a Confectioners Stall. She had not lived long with her Miſtreſs, but as ſhe was envyed by her Neighbouring Apprentices, ſo ſhe was admired and courted by many of the Gallants of that end of the Town. Her Miſtreſs, who found the ſweetneſs of the in comes of her new-come Servant gave her much more liberty, and countenance, than ſhe had done any before, cloathing her in as good a habit, as might become ſuch an excellent Face, and the Eſteem that Gentlemen of Quality had for it.

She had by this time purged her ſelf of the barbariſms and impurities of the Engliſh tongue, by the daily converſe ſhe had with the Ladies, and Gallants of the Court, and had learnt *decorums* in Carriage, as well as elegancies in Language. Her Miſtreſs was much too blame in ſuffering her to wait upon Gentlemen at their Chambers, with Shirts, Sleeves, Cravats, *&c.* though it is cuſtomary, yet dangerous to thoſe that would preſerve their Honour. By which means ſhe had ſo many temptations offered to her, that the like would have taken in the *Maiden Fortreſs* of a *Veſtal Votareſs*. They courted her with thoſe Golden-Showers, which infallibly conquer,

(having

(having *Jove* for their Preſident) no wonder then if ſhe yielded to her overcomers.

This ſtill brought in more Griſts to her Miſtreſſes's Mill, who gave her good Council to have a care of the Temptations of the Fleſh; but ſhe could diſcern by her Eyes her advice came too late: and knowing that Trade would not laſt long, gave her in a manner her own freedom, asking her leave, when ſhe went abroad; but yet her Miſtreſs was not ſuch a Fool, but ſhe knew well enough to whom ſhe granted liberty to go abroad with her Servant; good Cuſtomers you may be ſure. There was not a day hardly paſt, but ſhe was Coacht; but at length ſhe hackney'd it ſo long, that ſhe got an ambling Nagg. Being recovered, ſhe ſcorn'd to be diſmaid for one hard bargain, but ventured at it again, and again; and now ſhe was grown to that paſs, ſhe cared not, but cryed, *Clap that Clap can*, bearing in among them, firing Gun for Gun.

Her Miſtreſs having reapt the utmoſt of her Harveſt, adviſed her to keep in till ſhe was well, and being ſo, make the beſt and quickeſt advantage ſhe might of getting a Husband, for ſhe told her, that ſhe muſt ſtay with her no longer, ſhe being ſo great a ſcandal to her Profeſſion. My young Gentlewoman was over-ruled, courted, and a little after married, about two years before our *Souldier of Fortune* came acquainted with her, he now re-inforces his ſuit, and tells her withal, if ſhe will be ruled by him, they ſhould both march off together, it was agreed on, that ſhe ſhould obſerve her opportunity, and take what Money

and Goods of her Husbands ſhe could, and come to him; which accordingly ſhe did: and now being both glad, that the one ſhould be freed from a croſs-grain'd impotent Husband: and the other from a jealous deformed, ill condition'd Wife, they both went to the Weſt of *England*, not intending then to leave the Kingdom; but finding a Ship ready to Sail for *Barbadoes*; and judging themſelves not ſecure, till they got thither, or to ſome other forreign Plantation, they reſolved to go, carrying Money enough to pay their paſſage, and Goods to live aſhore on.

But let me not forget my promiſe, but give you an account of the reſt in order; the next are,

Two Button-makers.

They are hardly worth taking notice of, and therefore I ſhall not much trouble my ſelf about them. They were brought up in *London*, and therefore they were capable of driving a Trade in the Countrey: and indeed they were forced to make that their refuge or Sanctuary. For in the place aforeſaid, they were known to be ſuch notorious Night-walkers, and Pick-Pockets, (for which they had been ſo often in thoſe two famous Univerſities, *Mewgate* and *Bridewell*,) that they reſolved to go elſewhere; making choice of *Exceſter*, a place ſo remote from their former habitation and acquaintance, that they aſſured themſelves of a new credit, amongſt a People ſo altogether unknown to them.

There they took a Chamber, (lying together) and went

went for two *Sisters*; the noise of two *London* Button-makers coming down to inhabit in that City, quickly reacht the ears of the *Shop*-keepers therein, and that word, *London* carried so great a sway, and esteem with it, that they were presently imployed, and had much work a days. A young Mercer, newly set up, fell in love with one of them, and prosecuted his *Suit* so closely, that though with much difficulty (she giving him many repulses to make him the more eager in the pursuit, yet he at length obtained his desires, and so fond he was of his enjoyments, that his business must needs lie at six and sevens, since, all the day after, he imployed his time in the Company. *She* like a Cunningham, at last fearing the Proverb will prove true, (*Hot love grows soon cold*,) she dretended her self with *Child*, which in two Months time grew so monstruously fast, that he must believe what his eyes saw so apparently. His Breech made Buttons too now, and not knowing how to save his Reputation, he consulted his best wits again, and again; at length found this the only expedient to preserve his endangered credit, that is, to give her a good sum of Mony, with which he might perswade her to remove into the Countrey. He propounded this to her, (and although she was ready to leap out of her skin to see her Design take so good effect,) yet she would give no hearing to it, but falling on her knees, beg'd that he would save hers, and his own Reputation, by making her an honest Woman, that is, marrying her: if he would not condescend to that, she would admit of no other terms, but what sudden death should make her the overture of.

Some days he spent in perswading her; getting

her good will; he gave her a ſum of Money to accommodate her lying Inn, in the Countrey; giving a good part to her Comrade, and ordering her ſo ſtay till her return, which ſhould be ſpeedy; ſhe took leave of her Lover, as if ſhe had been doing the like to her Soul going a Voyage to the other world. But ſhe was no ſooner out of ſight, but ſhe re-aſſumed her former jolly temper; coming to an Inn (where ſhe was to lie that night) *ſhe there miſcarried of a Cuſhon*, To carry on her project with the leaſt ſuſpition, the next day ſhe went for B*riſtol*, where ſtaying four or five days to recreate her ſelf, and ſee the curioſities of that City, ſhe removed to another, from thence to a third, fourth, and fifth, only to prolong time, that ſhe might not be ſuſpected on her return. Six weeks being expired, ſhe ſhap't her courſe homewards, where being arrived, ſhe found her Comrade had not been idle, but had imployed thoſe hands ſhe ſate on to a very good advantage.

Her Lover hearing of her return played leaſt in ſight; and although he heard that ſhe had caſt her Colt, yet would not come nigh her, for fear of paying as dearly for his pleaſures, as he had done before; and ſo reſolved to acquit her for ever. Yet his forſaking her did not hinder other Viſitants. To conclude, they had cheated ſo many with the pretence of being with Child, that the younger-Fry were affraid to come near them, being lookt upon by the Town, no other than a Couple of ſubtle Trapans. Their Trade thus miſerably decaying, they reſolved to try what effects Night-walking would produce. So ſtroling about one evening, with their white Aprons ſpread

as

as a Flagg of Truce, they walkt a long time before they could meet with any fit for the purpoſe; in ſhort, when it was grown late, they met with a Gentleman coming out of a Tavern, more than half drunk, whom they pickt up, the bargain was quickly ſtruck, and into an Entry they went, one of the Siſters ſtanding at door as a Centinal; at length (quoth ſhe within) *Good Sir, let me go, the Watch is coming*; which he hearing, ſtept nimbly into the ſtreet, becauſe he would not be found with Females in ſo ſuſpected a place; caſting his head about, he perceiving his two Wenches make more than ordinary haſte, he preſently ſuſpected that they had ſhew'd his Pockets ſoul Play; wherefore putting his Hands therein, found his Watch miſſing, he ſtraightways ran after them, and juſt overtook them as he met with the Watch, by whom they were ſecured, and being ſearcht, the Watch was found; the next day they were carried before a Juſtice, who upon Examination, finding them guilty, committed them to Gaol. At the Sizes, ſuch a general complaint (beſides this theft) came in againſt them by the ſober Citizens, for debauching and ruiuating their Servants, that they were both ſentenced to be tranſported. The ſame Sizes was doom'd another after the ſame manner, and for the ſame practice, whom whoſoever marries, hath got a wife with a treble Trade, a Whore, a Thief, and a Stockin-mender; but fearing leſt if I handle her, I ſhall offend your Noſes, I ſhall paſs her by, and preſent your Noſtrils with the perfume of

An Orange-Wench.

Fair Oranges,——*Fine Lemmons*, a cunning Slut, who by a fifteen years practice, had got her trade to her fingers ends! She uſed that cry in the ſtreets of *London* at firſt, to get her a livelihood; but her Face had ſo cryed her up, that her Gallants would have decryed her Trade, as too mean a thing for her to follow; but ſhe would not be perſwaded to it, fearing ſhe ſhould be abridged of her Liberty. For whilſt ſhe had the liberty of rovingevery where, ſhe had the priviledg and freedom to go boldly into a Tavern, where ſhe not only ſold her Ware, but had the convenience to truck for a Commodity of another ſort. She was witty, and very well furniſht with a drolling Common-Place-Book, out of which ſhe could ſuit any merry diſcourſe whatſoever. By which means her company was ſo generally coveted, that ſhe could not paſs the ſtreets, but ſome or other out of a Tavern-Window would call her up, who would empty her Basket, fill her skin with Wine, only that they might make ſome ſport with her. A wealthy old Widower, an Ale-houſe-keeper, knowing how generally ſhe was belov'd, cared not much to be made a Cuckold, ſo that he could but increaſe his Trade, which he knew he ſhould do, if he married her, which he did by a very expenſive Courtſhip, ſhe not caring if he had ſpent every groat.

She lived with him ſome years, in which time they had got a world of Money, the houſe being ſeldom full before, but ſince her coming thither, always filled for

for her ſake. The old fooll (having now gotten enough) began now to dote on her, and grew ſo jealous, that he could not abide to ſee her in any company that was younger than himſelf, which ſhe not enduring, made up a good Purſe of Money, and went into *Yorkſhire*, where attiring her ſelf like a Widow, every one believed that ſhe was ſo, and behaved her ſelf ſo generouſly in all her deportments, that ſhe ſoon had Suiters of good quality ſwarming about her. She was ſo crafty, that ſhe never countenanced thoſe, who had ever made the leaſt ſcruple by enquiring what what ſhe was, whence ſhe came, what ſhe had, *&c.* but ſcorning ſuch enquiries, would ſometimes frankly ſay, when many of them were together; *Gentlemen, I wonder you ſhould buſie your ſelves about me, I trouble you not, therefore trouble not me; I intend to borrow no Money of you, and leave an Eſtate mortgaged for the payment; I have enough, and will lend you ſome upon good Security, if that you come for.* An old ſtale Batchellor (a Semi-Uſurer) hearing this, ſtrikes in with her, telling her he had Money enough too, (which ſhe had heard before) and that if ſhe pleaſed to make a ſcrutiny into the truth thereof, ſhe might; however he would not queſtion her Eſtate, but be very well contented, if ſhe had no more than what was on her back; ſhe deſired ſome time to conſider on ſo weighty a matter as Marriage was; not conſidering before what it meant, however ſhe was alotted a very good Husband, and ſhould ſhe now marry a worſe, it would be her hearts-breaking. He promiſed her every thing ſo fair, that it cleared up all her doubts, and ſo they joyned together in a Matrimonial tye.

The

The Husband ſhe left in *London*, was not only Horn-mad, but ſtark-mad for the loſs of his Wife, and ſo diligent he was in the ſearch of her, that like *Scoggin*, looking for a Hare in the Roof of a Houſe leaded, ſo he ſought her not only in places probable, but as unlikely to find her. His enquiry was ſo indefatigable, that at length he heard that ſhe was in *York-ſhire*, and was informed of the place wherein ſhe was. Over-joy'd at the news, he immediately takes horſe, and rides away towards her, reſolving to forgive her whatever ſhe had done, if ſhe would return with him, not knowing ſhe was married.

The old man came juſt to Town as it was her hap to look out at the window; ſhe knew him ſtreight, and was ready to drop down dead, to think what would become of her; but a Womans wit, which is alwayes beſt at a puſh, prompted her to call haſtily for her Husband, who running to her; *What is the matter*, ſaid he? *O Husband*, ſaid ſhe, *Do you ſee yonder Man on Horſe-back*? *Yes, yes*, he replyed; *then pray thee Sweet-heart run quickly and dog him where he Inns; and having ſo done, return with all the ſpeed you can poſſibly*: never did Foot-boy diſpatch a Ladies errand ſpeedier than he; and being returned; *Now my dear*, ſaid ſhe, *I will tell thee how happily things fall out; as I was looking out of that window, I ſaw that man you dogg'd, I have not ſeen him theſe five years before, he was indebted to my husband in the ſum of* 300 l. *the Money hath been due long ſince, and not yet paid, it is thine now, go inſtantly and arreſt him at thine own Suit, I will prove the Debt, his name is*——— This obedient Coxcomb performed what his Wife deſired him to do: This Brother Starling of his being not

not acqnainted in the place, and not being able to produce Bail, was conſtrained to go to Priſon, where we leave him, vowing and proteſting he neither knew the Man, nor ever owed in all his life half the ſum. In the mean time our *Orange-woman* had perſwaded her Husband to give her leave to go to *London* with all ſpeed and fetch the Bond ſhe had left in a friends hand, and if need required, bring the Witneſs down; *there is no fear Husband,* ſaid ſhe, *of the Money, for his Eſtate conſiſts ſolely in that, imploying it in buying Cattle in* Ireland, *and tranſporting them into* England; *I have laid wait for him many and many a time, but never could meet with ſo happy an opportunity.*

Her Husband poor credulous Gentleman, believed every word ſhe ſaid, and conſented to her motion, with much alacrity. The next day the Stage Coach was to ſet forth, ſo he went ſtreight and beſpake a place, whilſt ſhe had fixt every thing for her next dayes journey. That night, when her Husband was faſt aſleep, ſhe took the Key of his Cloſet out of his Pocket, and opening it, ſhe unlockt a Cabinet, and took thence a hundred pieces of old Gold, which had lain there many a year undiſturbed. In the morning by time, after a great deal of ſeeming ſorrow that ſhe ſhould be thus neceſſitated to be abſent from her dearly beloved Husband, ſhe entred the Coach, and was quickly out of ſight. At the firſt Baiting-ſtage the Coach came at, ſhe altered her reſolution of going for *London*, telling the Coach-man, ſhe had extraordinary buſineſs ſome fifteen miles out of the way, and that if he would drive the Coach that way, ſhe would reward him; he told her it was impoſſible to be done, (which ſhe knew

as

as well as himſelf, *But Madam*, ſaid he, *you have paid the Coach, and you may do as you pleaſe.*

She hired a Horſe preſently, and a Man to ride before her, and having rid till it was almoſt dark, ſhe cauſed her Man to make what haſte he could to the next Inn, pretending ſhe was miſtaken in the length of the way. The next morning calling for a Quart of Mull'd Sack, ſhe drank to her Man, making him very merry, and then told him, ſhe was reſolved to go for *Cheſter*, having buſineſs of greater moment to diſpatch there firſt ; ſo giving him a Crown for his own pains, & half a Crown a day, for ſo long as they ſhould be out, the Fellow was very glad of, knowing his Maſter would be pleaſed with him for ſo doing. Coming there, ſhe diſmiſſed the Fellow, and hearing there were Ships ready to Sail, the next day ſhe went to *Holy-head*, and there imbarqu'd for *Dublin*.

How her two Husbands in her abſence agreed I know not ; but ſhe no ſooner thought her ſelf ſecure in this ſtrange Country, but ſhe appear'd as ſplendid in Apparel, as the greateſt Court-gallant of them all, and with a new Surname Coacht it with the beſt of them, and marryed again, a thing too often practiſed there) and lived ſo long there, till ſhe had ſpent what her Husband had gotten in many years labour ; and now when all was gone in a manner, ſhe falls into the acquaintance of a young huffing Blade, who not dareing to ſtay longer in *Ireland*, (by reaſon of the many Debts he owed there) perſwaded her to go for *Briſtol* with him, where ſhe ſhould have what her heart could deſire. Having a greater love for his Perſon than ſhe had a belief to what he promiſed, ſhe yielded;

ed; and without trifling away time, put their purpoſe into preſent practice. Being at Sea, they had like to have ſplit upon the Biſhop and his twelve Clerks, (Rocks ſo called lying to the Southward of *Wales*) had ſhe been there loſt, any one that knew her life and converſation, might have lookt on it as a juſt Judgement, having abuſed and violated thoſe ſacred Laws the Church hath injoyned her to obſerve by her moſt deteſtable Polygamy. However, they were hindred from putting into the Port they were bound to, and inſtead thereof, arrived at *Barnſtable*; where in a little time after their arrival, he growing weary of her, took every Penny ſhe had, not leaving her wherewithal to diſcharge her Quarters. She was rightly ſerved, and may all ſuch meet with puniſhments ſuitable to their notorious practiſes. The fear of her Husband knowing where ſhe was, and the fulneſs of her own temper together, (ſeeing ſhe ſhould be thus outwitted) made her thus reſolve the tryal of retrieving her misfortune in a forreign adventure. Almoſt on the ſame Baſis or Ground-work was founded the deſperate reſolution of our two Crack't Maiden-Servants. For the one was tollerably handſome, and thought her ſelf meat good enough for her Maſter, or his Son; The latter of which ſhe liked beſt, but he fitted her not to her liking; for having gotten her Maiden-head, (by promiſing her Marriage) and with Child to boot, marryed another; She beeing fooliſh, and having no Friends to adviſe her how to compenſate her loſs by ſuing him, ſhe only took pet, put finger in eye, and vow'd ſhe would never ſee him; a ſhrewd threat for one that was glad to be rid of her. Her Companion with her knowing her

her resolution, having staid to the age of near forty, and not one so much as proferring to kiss her, (for indeed had you seen her when she had drest her self with all the advantages her utmost Art could use, you must have turned your head aside,) I say having lived thus long a Maid, (I dare swear for her) and never expecting to have to do with any Christian, she had some hopes that she might be a subject fit enough for some barbarous Black Diabolical Infidel, to get Cannibals upon.

And now having given you an account of what Cattle we had aboard, except only what I have purposely left to bring up the Reer, and they are four

Common Prostitutes.

Not to describe them particularly, but all of their Function in general; They are things of prodigious strength, which is sufficiently manifested in the ruin of the strongest Man, and backsliding of the wisest Man. I hardly know, or have heard of any whom they have not stagger'd, excepting *Job*, who firmly stood maugre the Devil, and his Wife.

In the faces of the common Traders by diligent search, you may find some Raggs of over-worn Beauty, like old Clothes in Brokers windows, to make you believe that there are better wares within; yet he that trades with them, is like to have a bad bargain, for she can sell him nothing but the Pox, or Repentance. As for their upper parts, they are the Shops of *Cupid*, and their lower parts are his Warehouse. Length of time makes them turn Bank-rupts, spoiling

ſpoiling their Game by wrinckling their faces, which paint muſt rectify, but ſo hardly, that with all their black Spots and Patches they look but like a ruſty Gamon of Bacon ſtuck with Cloves, ſcarce ſo beautiful, but not half ſo ſavoury; coming to this Age, ſhe is like a rotten ſtick, only fit to kindle green ones. In ſhort, they are a loathſom ſtinking Carreon, too unclean to enter into Heaven, too diſeaſed to continue longer on Earth; the ſhame and ſtain of her Sex, the ſcorn of wiſe-men, and utter ruine of fools. Theſe two Braſe of Whores were taken up at *Exceſter* upon the like account as the former Females were, for Whoring, Filching, and debauching, and ſo ſuffered the ſame doom with the reſt. That famous City ſince it had a name, had never been ſo peſter'd before with ſuch a brood of Cockatrices, It is true, your *London* Doxies will go down into the Countrey ſometimes for their paſtime, with their Cullyes, but when ere they come, it is but a touch and away, but theſe deluding and deſtroying *Syrens*, ſtaid ſo long, till they were ready to ſpawn, and had not their own too publick Roguery detected them, they in a little time longer might have infected half the Countrey.

Our Maſter having intelligence of this brave booty, rode to *Exeter*, where agreeing for this parcel of Cattle, he took them all down with him to *Barnſtable*, ſhipping them immediatly upon his arrival; not long after my Rogueſhip (being nipt in the Bud of my Roguiſh deſigns, (my forwards prancks ſhewing what a dangerous fellow I might prove if I were let alone to grow up in them,) was committed to the cuſtody of the Maſter of the Ship, to carry me with the reſt to ſome

remote place far enough diſtant from *England*, that it might not be diſturbed with the noiſe of our lewd and vitious Practiſes. I had not been many hours among them, before I began to take ſpecial notice of my new Comrades, and not many dayes e're I drew ſuch remarkable obſervations from them all, as to give you this account of them, the major part whereof, is the extract of their own confeſſions; and now I ſhall proceed as to our Voyage.

CHAP. XII.

He is made a Cabbin-Boy, and ſhews what is the duty thereof; A pleaſant drunken encounter between Himſelf, little Miſs, and two other ſuppoſed Rivals; his Crime, and Puniſhment. He returns for England, *and coming to* Graves end, *he diſcovers a notable trick of a Juſtice in diſcovering one that uſually ſtole his Wood; Alſo, an incomparable Adventure of a young Woman, and himſelf in one Hammock together.*

NEver had *villanous Exiles* ſuch a fair Paſſage as we had, and to ſpeak the truth, though nothing could have daunted me, yet the calmneſs of the Sea, and the clearneſs of the weather, did very much encourage me to be a Sea-man. My Maſter was a very facetious merry man, and one of no mean underſtanding, who ſeeing the freeneſs of my jocular humour, did not hinder the care of his buſineſs, he acknowledged to have a benefit in me, which few others received

received from their Servants, not only injoying my labour and pains taking, but receiving a divertiſement in the execution thereof. I waited on my Maſter diligently, ſwabb'd his Cabbin daily, made his Bed, cleanſed the Houſe of Office often, and who ſo ready as I to fetch the Victuals abaſt, and above all things minded my Maſters ringing the Bell, as it was my duty, ſo it was my diſcretion and prudence; for had I at any time been playing the Rogue out of hearing the Bell, if it rang in that interval, I was aſſuredly drubb'd; for faults of a higher nature, I was laid over a Gun and laſht, or tyed by the Thumbs, and whipt with a Cat of Nine Tails.

My lodging was in the Steerage near the Bulk-head, that I might be ready and within hearing: And though I was ſo very a Rogue aſhore, yet I was a man of credit aboard, for my Maſter truſted me with all the choice comforts which concerned his Life, committing to my charge his Wines, both *Spaniſh* and *French*, with Brandy, and ſeveral cordial Waters, Sugar, all ſorts of Spices; Tobacco, and what not, expedient for long Voyage. Such regard he had of me, that he taught me to Write, and Cypher, which for ſo ſhort a time I underſtood ſo well, as I became the wonder of every one in the Ship; Seeing me ſo forward, he did put me on the copying of his Journals, taught me how to take off the Log, to take the height of the Sun at twelve a Clock, by which we know what Latitude we are in; the knowledge of theſe things I gained not under three or four Voyages, but in this firſt expedition I could run up to the Main-top, and furl a Sail, though in a ſtreſs of Weather.

I minded ſo much my buſineſs, that I ſeldom viſited any of the Paſſengers I formerly deſcribed, and had almoſt forgot my little *Miſs*, but perceiving my Maſters former kindneſs to them, was converted into harſh and rough uſage, tumbling them like Dogs into the Hold, when ſometimes they offered to come upon the Decks to Air themſelves, I could not but pity them; and to Buoy up their Spirits, I would frequently give them a Dram, to be ſure my *Miſs* had a treble portion, and would often ſteal her freſh meat, than which I know not what is more valuable in a long run at Sea.

I acted not my buſineſs ſo cloſely, but that my Maſter diſcovered the goodneſs of my nature to my fellow-travellers; however finding no conſiderable loſs and decay of his Liquors, only threatned me for that time what wonderful puniſhment he would inflict upon me, if ever he catcht me in the like again: I thinking he had but jeſted, and truſting to my wit for the ſecret management of the project, and the excuſe thereof when it was effected by the inſtigation of two luſty young fellows, I was induced to ſteal from my Maſter a Bottle of Sack, and getting into a cloſe corner with my forementioned Doxy, whom I had ſingled out, and theſe two Fellows, we made a ſhift to drink it off; they prompted me to fetch another, but I would not yield, till I had firſt gone aloft, to ſee whether the Coaſt was clear; finding my Maſter aſleep in the great Cabbin, I got out a Bottle of French-Wine, which we diſpatcht as we had done the other; not ſatisfied with this, they perſwaded me by all means to fetch another, and with that they would be contented; I would not condeſcend in any

caſe,

caſe, till the witch my Wench (that by this time was got above half drunk) intreated me with *prithee do, what will you deny me?* and then I could hold out no longer; but being by the Liquor in a fit mood to do any Roguery, I promiſed them to return with ſome more with all expedition; now I began to conſider that what we had drank already, was not ſo ſtrong as Brandy, and therefore lookt on that Liquor moſt convenient for our drunken purpoſe; I opened a *Guard de-vines*, and taking out almoſt a Quart Bottle, I made what haſte I could to my ſeaſoned Drunkards, who were eagerly gazing for me; but finding them too petulantly familiar with my *Miſtreſs*, I had once a mind to have ſtaved the Bottle, but that I ſhould loſe my ſhare of the Brandy, but diſſembling well my paſſion, I drank on with them; but I by reaſon of the tenderneſs of my Age, and my Female friend being not accuſtomed to drinking, were not able to hold out with them; the fumes aſcending into my head, I thought my ſelf as good as any man, (judge you whether I was not a proper one at fourteen years of Age?) and would not take an affront from any, and ſo charging them with the abuſe they had done me in being too ſawcy with my concerns, I made no more ado, but fell foul with them both, my little *Virago* ſeeing me engaged, was reſolved not to be idle, but with the Glaſs Bottle lays one of them over the Cox-comb, which breaking, cutt his pate, the ſight of his blood made him more afraid than hurt, and fearing leſt he ſhould bleed himſelf to death, acquits our Company, and ran with all ſpeed to the Chirurgion, in the mean time we made our party good with the other, and ſo pounden him, that he

was glad to ſhoot the Pit, and leave us ſole Conquerors of the Field, having now no other enmey in ſight to contend within us, I took my ſtout Amazon by the hand, and led her up aloft in triumph, the Sea-men were ready to die with laughter to ſee how we had mall'd thoſe two Boobies; but their laughter increaſt to that exceſs, that it wakened my Maſter to ſee me and my Damſel ſtrutt and reel to and fro the Decks, bidding defiance to them all, daring the beſt of them to touch her upon their perils; as I was thus Lording it, my Maſter made his appearance, who was ſo ſurprized he knew not what to ſay, neither was it to any purpoſe, for my Damſel was as merry as a Hawk, who nothing but ſang whilſt I *Don-Drunken Furioſo* was ſtorming like a *Raging Turk*.

My Maſter perceiving that nothing would appeaſe my wrath, nor ſilence the harmonious Tongue of my tippled Madam, commanded us both to be clapt in the *Bilboes*, and there to continue till we were a little more ſober. We ſoon talkt our ſelves aſleep, and ſleept as ſoundly as if we had lain on a Feather-bed, awakening, we wondred to ſee our ſelves in that condition, and could not imagine how we came there, but by ſome inchantment; but our admiration and amazement were ſoon converted into ſomething of another nature, by my Maſters ſending for us; coming before him, there did I ſee my two Antagoniſts, the ſight whereof immediately informed by memory with the precedent days proceedings; my face did preſently diſcover my guilt.

Heu quam difficile eſt crimen non prodere vultu?
Alas how hard it is for any face
To hide a crime, if it hath any Grace?

And had not our countenances betrayed us, there were too many apparent evidences for our conviction. Now did I ſee my *quondam* loving friend lay aſide the pleaſantneſs of his former looks, and aſſume the ſevere gravity of a Judges aſpect, and having diſmiſt my fighting Madam, ſentenced me and my two combatants to be that inſtant conveyed to the Capſton, which was done accordingly, and there were we ſeized, incloſed within a Hoop, and a Cat of nine tails delivered into each our hands; this being done, ſaid our Maſter, *Let me ſee how you will fight now? if you do not laſh one another ſoundly, I will have thoſe that ſhall*; ſo commanding the Capſton Bar to be turned round, to work we went; I laid it on gently at firſt on him that was before me, bnt finding the ſmart of the blows increaſe, and the laſhes multiply in ſtrength as well as quantity, by him that was behind me, I ſpared my fore-man not a jot, but as faſt and as ſmartly as I could, I jerkt him about; this cauſed him to redouble his blows on the other, he again on me, and ſo we went round in that unmerciful manner, that our Maſter out of meer pity was forc'd to releaſe us.

The ſeverity of this puniſhment (for none could have had the heart to have whipt us as we whipt our ſelves,) cured me of my Drunken fits for that whole Voyage, and ſo reduced me to order and civility, that *I* was once more received into his favour. And

now I grew ſo cautious in the diſpoſal of thoſe Liquors of Life, that none participated with me in their enjoyments, but my Maſter and his friends, who was a ſevere check over me in what he had committed to my charge. Immediately after our arrival at *Barbadoes*, having complemented the Iſland with the uſual ceremony of firing ſome Guns, a ſwarm of Boats from thence ſettled about our Ship, the Planters therein boarded us on every ſide, as if they intended to have made lawful Prize of us. Our Commodities between Decks were forthwith rubbig'd, (rummig'd I mean) and expoſed to the view of the Buyer; they need not queſtion the goodneſs of the Ware, ſince it hath been ſufficiently tryed, and could not want a *probatum* on the report of hundreds. Nothing troubled me more than to ſee my young Female Comrade truckt for Tobacco, the exchange of equal levity, and as the one is fit only to be burnt, ſo in time may the other, though ſo green one would imagine nor capable of entertaining a flame. They were all diſpoſed off in a very ſhort time, and thoſe that deſpaired of ever having Husbands in *England*, had them here ready made to their hands, and they with others found in this remote place a conveniency for raiſing a new credit and reputation, which they had irrecoverably loſt elſewhere.

All the time that we lay here at Anchor I was not permitted to go aſhore, a thing that griev'd me to the heart, eſpecially having not the benefit of others, who had the freedom of going aſhore and refreſh themſelves with freſh Proviſions. Our Sea-men that were on Ship-board would have the ſame conveniences

ces as if they were where properly they might be had, but were ſo inhumane to me, that I muſt eat what the Ship afforded, or faſt; this they did, that I might adventure another whipping by ſtealing my Maſters Liquors, knowing how ſtrongly I longed to taſte of freſh meat: not a bit went down my throat but what I purchaſed with the hazzard aforeſaid; but my Maſters carowſing at the *Indian Bridge*, made him forget what was exhauſted out of his Cabbin, and ſo I came off undiſcovered.

Having taken in our Loading proper for our Tranſportation, as to Tobacco, Indigo, Cotton, and Sugar, (which laſt ſweetned all the bitter Pills of affliction which I had ſwallowed) we ſet Sail for *England*, and with a proſperous Gale, and good weather, we ſafely arrived in the *Downs*, where lying a ſmall time, we came away to *Graves-End*, and there we ſtaid two Tides. My Maſter going aſhore, I begg'd him that he would let me go with him, having not ſet foot on Land in ſo long time; the conſideration thereof perſwaded him to grant my requeſt; and taking an opportunity to ſlip from my Maſter, I chanc'd to happen into an Houſe, where at that little time of my ſtaying happen'd a remarkable paſſage. There was a Juſtice of Peace that lived not far from this Houſe, who had a Wood-yard adjoyning hereunto: the near adjacency of this Fewel tempted my Landlord to purloin from thence, that he might ſave ſome expence in firing; but he did it ſo often, that he cauſed the Juſtice to ſuſpect he was groſly abuſed by ſome or other thereabout; and that he might find out the offender, he ordered his Servants to bore large holes in ſome of the

the Loggs, and fill them with Gun-powder, plugging up the ſame holes very cloſe again; which was performed according to inſtruction, and the deſign took its deſired effect; for our Landlord according to his wonted cuſtom, came into the Yard, and happened to take thoſe very Loggs, and carried them home to uſe them as he had done the reſt; his Pot was over the Fire, and a Spit before it, in order to a Supper beſpoke by ſome ſtrangers. I was ſmoaking by the fire ſide, (that you may know I was not ill bred,) and had a Pot of Ale in my hand ſitting very near the Fire, my Landlord eagerly bid me remove farther off that he might have room to ſupply his decaying Fire, (it was well for me;) having laid on thoſe Loggs, in a little time after came an old Woman (whoſe ancient and deformed withered face had made her a long time ſuſpected for a Witch,) who begged heartily for an Alms, but ſuch was the cruel hard heartedneſs of our Landlord, that he not only denyed her, but rudely thruſt her from the door, the poor helpleſs Woman durſt not openly exclaim, but as ſhe was muttering to her ſelf her great diſcontent, the Fire got to the Powder incloſed in the Wood aforeſaid, and being ſo ſtraitly and througly confin'd, burſt the Logs like a *Granado*, tearing the Meat off the Spit, blowing the Pot off the Hooks, and brake ſome ſmall matter of the Brick-work of the Chimney. My loſs conſiſted in the dropping of my Pot of Ale with the ſuddain aſtoniſhment; but my Landlord lookt like a fellow diſtracted out of his wits; recollecting himſelf, and ſeeing what dammage was done him, concluded this begger-woman was the cauſe of all this miſchief, believing

lieving her now to be what ſhe had been a long time ſuſpected for a Witch, and therefore leaves his Houſe confuſedly,(which gave me an opportunity to trip off and leave my reckoning unpaid,) and getting a Conſtable, ſeiz'd this ignorant piece of antiquity, carrying her before the Juſtice that had loſt his Wood from time to time; My Landlord hereupon largely acquainted his Worſhip the ſad hap that had befallen him and the grounds of his ſuſpecting this Woman; which when the Juſtice had heard to the full, he then underſtood who was the Wood-ſtealer, and ſo acquitting the old Woman, but comitted my Landlord, who muſt now pay for his Children ſitting by other Peoples Fires.

I had not ſo much Money but that I was very glad to ſave my ſmall reckoning; returning to my Maſter, he was very jolly, reſolving to lie athore that night in *Graves-end*, and commanded me to attend him; not a drop of Wine would go down with him I obſerved without his Land-lady, which was a very lovely Woman, had ſhe not been a little too fat: Her husband was the abſolute picture of a Cuckold; it is ſtrange that a man ſhould read that name ſo legibly in any ones face.

Night coming on, my Maſter ſeem'd to be more drunk than he was, that he might the better excuſe his ſo ſoon going to bed, deſiring to take his repoſe, after I had pull'd off his Shooes and Stockins, and he had all undreſt himſelf, being between the Sheets, I tuckt in the Bed-cloathes about him, and in ſo doing took an occaſion to meet with his Breeches, and diving into the Pockets I conveyed away two half Crowns

Crowns, and ſo ſhutting the Chamber door, I left him.

Going into the Kitchen, I called for Wine, ſome upon my Maſters account, the reſt upon my own charge; It was my good fortune to be alone with the Maid, all the reſt of the Family (being late) were gone to bed.

The Maid (like the reſt of the worſt of Houſewives, who work in the night and play in the day,) was making at that time a Smock for her ſelf, and as I gueſs ſate up ſomewhat the later, becauſe ſhe would completely finiſh it; I had made my ſelf familiar with her, and taking this advantage to raiſe ſome petulant diſcourſe; *Is this your Smock?* ſaid I, *Yes*, ſhe replyed, *then ſure*, ſaid I, *you are very laviſh of your Cloth to make it ſo wide; I will lay you five ſhillings, and you ſhall hold ſtakes, that it will contain us both, and to ſpare: How*, ſaid ſhe, *I will lay you that wager If I never engage in another*; But the difficulty lay in this, that ſhe ſaw there was a neceſſity that ſhe muſt uncaſe as well as my ſelf, and therefore ſeemed very unwilling ſo to do; but that ſhe muſt loſe the Crown if ſhe did not, ſo ſhe conſented: having the Smock on, I crept into it, and abſolutely caſed my Arms in the ſame ſleeves; hers were in before, my head peeping out at the boſom; but endeavouring to diſ-ingage by the ſame means we had intangled our ſelves, we found it impoſſible, our Arms being extended like the wings of a *Spread Eagle*, nor could we contract or draw them to our bodies, in this plight we were in a good while, not knowing what to reſolve on. At length with one joint conſent we raiſed our Arms to the Tenter-hooks of the Shelf, (for though *I* was young,

young, I was tall, and ſo was ſhe,) and hanging the Sleeve thereon, we pull'd, thinking to draw it off that way; but ſtriving with what ſtrength we had left, we pull'd the ſhelf down, and all the Pewter ratling about our ears: This noiſe awakened the man of the Houſe, and thinking to jog his Wife, found no ſuch thing beſide him; this ſtartled him more; however he was reſolved to ſee what it was, and therefore ſtruck a light; but recalling himſelf as he was deſcending the ſtairs, he returned, thinking it would be ſafer (if Theeves were below,) to take my Maſter with him, and therefore goes to his Chamber door, which he found open, and entring the room, found his wife in bed with him faſt aſleep; whilſt he was about to waken them, we below were ſtruggling to get looſe, and ſtumbling upon the ſhelf fallen, we fell over it upon the Diſhes, which made as great a noiſe as the former; this haſtned him to wake them, reproving his Wife for her careleſneſs more than looſeneſs, and telling them there were Thieves in the Houſe; my Maſter got up and went down with his Landlord to ſee what the matter was in the Kitchen: They had no ſooner entred the door but they were ſtrangely amazed to ſee one Body with two Heads; approaching nearer, my Maſter knew one Head to be his mans, and the other to be his Landlords Maids: with much difficulty they took this Fleſh Pudding out of the Bagg; it being midnight we were not examined then, but deferred till the next morning: in the mean time they conſulted together; and it was agreed upon between our Landlord and his Wife, that conditionally my Maſter would forgive me, they would their Maid, and never fooliſhly proclaim their ſhame to

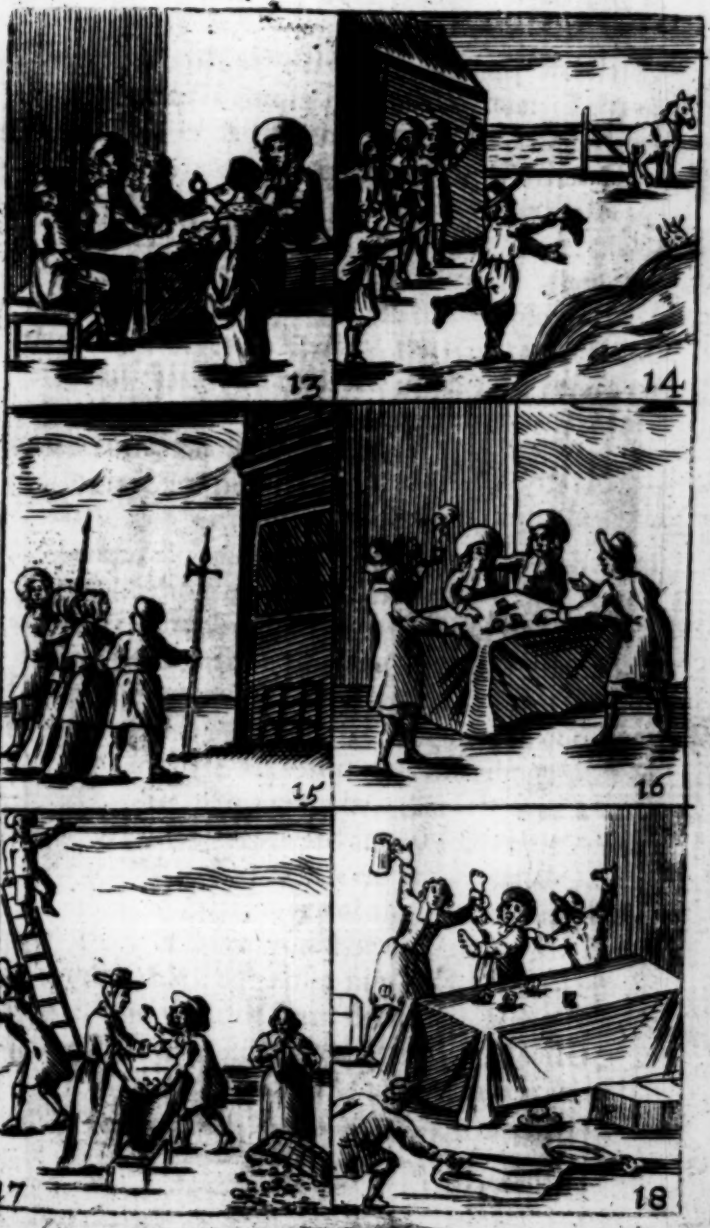
the

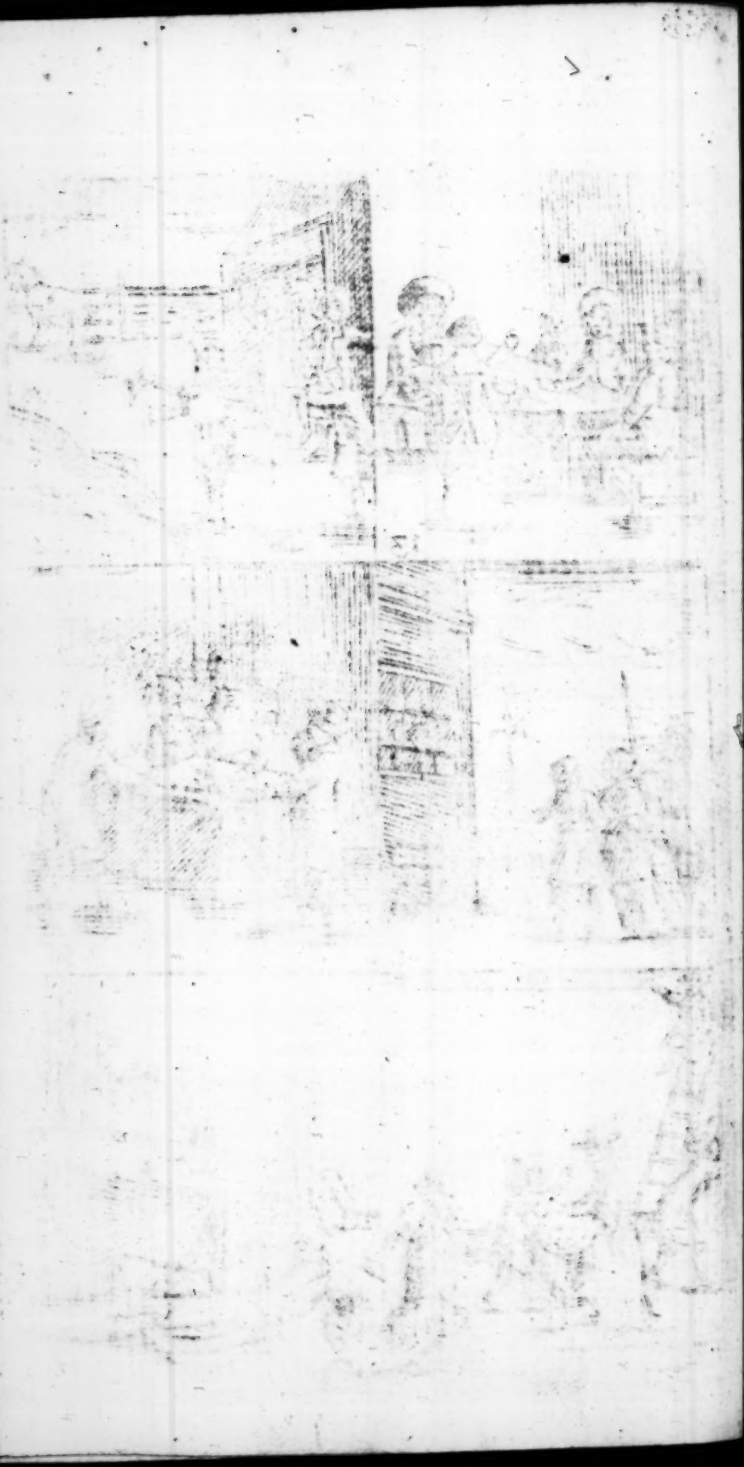
the world which now lay in their powers to conceal. This adventure ſtaid us longer aſhore than we intended, but at length getting aboard, we ſailed up to *Eriff*, where we Anchored two or three days for ſome private buſineſs our Maſter had, *&c.* and from thence we went directly up the River, and came to an Anchor over againſt *Shadwell-Dock*.

CHAP. XIII.

He buyes a Horſe in Smithfield, *he is baſely cheated in the goodneſs by the Horſe-Courſer, the manner how; he diſcants on his own ill Horſemanſhip as he is a Sea-man. He rides to* Maiden-head, *his Landlady loſeth a Diamond Ring, he invents an incomparable exploit to reſtore it her again.*

MY Maſter being an eminent Sea-man, and faithful to his truſt, had no ſooner cleared his *Ship*, but had immediately another Voyage offered him to *Virginia*, returning home in ſafety, the next he made was to the *Streights*; I was there with him ſeveral times at *Legorn*, twice in the *Weſt Indies*, and twice at the *Canaries*; by this time my Apprentiſhip was expired, which I went through with ſo much ſatisfaction to my Maſter, notwithſtanding a thouſand Rogueries I committed in that time, that in our next Voyage which was to *Guinny*, I was advanced to the dignity of a *Cockswain*, Whereupon the long boat was committed to my Charge, and when any occaſion ſerved, I had my Crew always ready for the skiff; I underſtood my place quickly, and behaved


13
14
15
16
17
18



ved my ſelf in it, that our *Boat Swain* dying, I was conſtituted in his place; now was my care increaſed, for I had charge of all the Rigging, Maſts, and Sails, with many other matters of conſequence. I have heard my Maſter ſay twenty times, that he had rather hear me when we were weighing Anchor (our Men being at the *Capſton*) cry *heave clearly my boys*, than a noiſe of Muſick, for I had a ſtrong yet pleaſant voice, and I tun'd it to ſome purpoſe when the Anchor was almoſt a peek. In this imployment *I* made two Voyages to *Guinny*, the laſt thereof was ſo ſucceſful that I was reſolved upon my return to take the pleaſures of the Land, and no places would ſerve my turn, but thoſe wherein I had received ſo much diſgrace and puniſhment.

In *Smithfield*, *London*, I bought an Horſe, he did ſo caper with the Fellow that rid him, that I feared this pamper'd beaſt would be to skittiſh, for a Sailer, that never beſtrid any living Creature; the Horſe coſt me ſix Pound and a Crown, I could not get the punctuality of his Rogueſhip to bate me the odd Mony, though in three days time forty ſhillings proved the utmoſt value of this great bargain. It was a very fair day when I ſet forward in my journey towards *Briſtol*, and becauſe the Streets were then dry, and no ſymptoms in the Heaven of any approaching Rain, I vainly thought there would be no occaſion for Boots thoſe intollerable cloggs of a nimble footed *Sea-man*. I mounted not without ſome dread and fear that this prancing Palfry would run away with his Maſter, but contrary to all expectation, I found the creature calm enough, being ready to lie down as I was getting up; much

much ado I had to get him to go till I had almoſt buryed my Heel-ſpur in his belly, and then he made a ſhift to trot; but Founder-foot on a ſuddain running a head, I was like to have been overſet. The dulneſs of my Horſe did ſhew what an Aſs I was to be ſo cheated; I might have known that within leſs than an hour after I had bought him, for in ſtead of Excrements, he evacuated an Eel at his poſteriors, which I believe was conveyed into him alive by the ſubtle Horſe courſer, to make him for the preſent more lively and ſprightful. With much difficulty I got him to *Maiden-head* that day; the next proving raining, my buſineſs did not require ſuch haſte, but that I might ſtay a day or two for fair weather.

I had Money enough, the ſight whereof did ſtrangely quicken the attendance of the Servants of the Houſe, and my liberal expence commanded both my Land-lord and Land-ladies company; and that I might continue their ſociety, I was inceſſant in the calling for Wine. My Land-lady was pre-ingaged in the company of ſeveral Gallants, ſo that I was like to have little of it, had it not been for an accident that befell her, which brought her into my Room where my Land-lord was. It ſeems one of the Gentlemen eſpyed a Ring on her Finger with a very fair Roſe of Diamonds in it, and deſiring her to let him ſee it for the excellency thereof; ſhe condeſcended, continuing her conceited diſcourſe, which ſhe raiſed on purpoſe, to ſhew what an eſteem ſhe had for her imaginary wit, and fancy; this Gentleman delivered the Ring to another, he to a third, that man conveyed it to a fourth that were troubled with the ſame curioſity; but

at

at the laſt it came into the hands of one that was very loath it ſhould go any further, ſince it had almoſt paſt round; She being this while ſo buſie in her tittle tattle, that ſhe neither minded how it was canvaſt about, or in the leaſt miſt it off her Finger: She left the room ſeveral times, and returned; but in fine ſhe found the loſs of her Ring, not knowing whether it was reſtored to her by that perſon ſhe lent a ſight thereof, and had dropt it, or if not reſtored, ſhe was ignorant of the Man, and therefore durſt not tax any one particularly. I have known many a thing, as a Silver Tobacco box, *&c.* left careleſly upon a Table which hath been taken up in jeſt, but kept in earneſt.

She was ſo puzzled ſhe knew not what to do; and not knowing how to remedy her ſelf, ſhe was reſolved to play the perfect Woman, *ſit down and cry*; which ſhe did in that pitiful manner, that I admired how any mans heart could be ſo hard, not to exchange a few inconſiderable Diamonds for ſo many ineſtimable Pearls that dropt from her eyes. Every one ſtiffly denyed the unworthineſs of the detention, and ſeemed ſomewhat diſpleaſed that their glowing gallantry ſhould be ſuſpected of an act ſo ungentile and unhandſom. Seeing there was no help, and ſhe could not conceal the loſs from her Husband, ſhe câme where we were, that we might in her ſad relation commiſerate and condole her great affliction.

I gave much heed to every circumſtance of her doleful ſtory, and minded it ſo well, that I fancy'd I had a project in my head which would give her aſſiſtance. *Come Madam*, ſaid I, *there is a Plot which I have juſt now contrived, which if it take effect, you*

ſhall give me a Bottle of Canary, if not, it will be no harm for you to make a tryal.

She was very glad to hear of any propoſition that might carry in it the hopes of getting her Ring again, and therefore freely promiſed me any thing. *VVhy then* ſaid I, *Go into your former company, but firſt dry your eyes, and expreſs all ſeeming joy imaginable, and tell thoſe that are inquiſitive at to the cauſe of this ſuddain alteration, that you have found your Ring again, and then mark diligently that man who cunningly conveys his hand into his own Pocket, my life for you that man hath the Ring.* Following my advice, ſhe reentred her former Room, and counterfeiting an exceſſive joy; *O Gentlemen your pardon*, ſaid ſhe, *I have found my Ring*! Obſerving the company heedfully, ſhe perceiv'd one ſtole down his hand into his Pocket, to feel whether the Ring was there, imagining, upon the hearing what ſhe ſaid, his Pocket had been pickt. *VVhere is the Ring I pray Madam*, ſaid one, and where did you find it? *Here Sirs*, ſaid ſhe, *have I found it, for this Gentleman hath now the Ring in his hand*, which ſhe forceably drew out of his Pocket, and ſo the Ring appear'd to his great ſhame and diſcredit. Her gratitude for my ſucceſful council did that night ſo Sack the Garriſon of my underſtanding, that all my Senſes *pro tempore* ſuffer'd in their general devaſtation.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

He is like to be robb'd in Maiden-head Thicket. *He tells a notable ſtory of a Tapſter and another at* Play *in* Redding. *At* Newberry, *a Horſe which he rode upon Tryal in the Streets, ran away with him unpaid for; at* Briſtol *he ran away with a pair of Boots then wanting them; he rides for* Exceſter, *where he won a conſiderable ſum of his Hoſt at Play.*

THe great ſtore of Rain that fell, and made the High-ways like Haſty Pudding, by which means though I rid in Shooes and Stockins, yet *I* was ſufficiently be-booted with dirt. I rid over the Common melancholy alone, but coming to *Maiden-Head Thicket*, there was company enough ſuch as I liked not by any means, and now *Gramercy Horſe*, for had not he looked as ſcurvily as I rid bootleſly ſcandalous, I had undoubtedly been robb'd; never was poor Horſe, and beaſtly Man ſo ſurvey'd before, by Devils I think, for their Faces by their Vizard-Maſques ſeemed every whit as black. Eſcaping that danger, I got the ſecond days journey to *Redding*, alighting, I fell all along, for I had kickt away my Leggs in riding thither, Never did I find the difference till now of riding on a Yard-arm, and on the ſharp-ridg'd back of a ſurfeited Jade; I had not ſo much skin left upon my Breech as would make a white patch for an *Ethiopian* Lady of Pleaſure. Here I lay three days to recover the damage my poſteriors had ſuſtained by riding my wooden Horſe. In which time I obſerved but little remarkable, but a Tapſters

Playing with a fellow of the Town for Money in a little By Ale-Houſe, where was ſold incomparable Ale, which I found out by the information of a Coblar, the reflection of whoſe face would have afforded light enough to an Ale-houſe at Mid-night.

I was a ſpectator on their Play, and glad I was of this opportunity, to divert my ſelf in a ſtrange place. The Tapſter in a little time had loſt to the other the price of 2 Barrels of Beer, which ſo inraged him, it being his all, that nothing could perſwade him but that he was cheated of his Money, that he napt on him, and I know not what, and ſwore he would have every penny of his Mony before he ſhould ſtir from the place. The other told him that he had won it fairly, and therefore would as ſurely keep it; hereupon the Tapſter ſtruck up his heels, and to work he went with him, the fellow ſeeing his drift that he would diſpoſſeſs him of his Money, got as much as he could privately out of his Pocket, and clapt it into his mouth cramming it almoſt full. The Tapſter was amazed to find ſo little in his Pockets, and therefore made all the Privy ſearch he could, which was all to no purpoſe, ſo that he concluded the fellow was little leſs than a Conjurer, after that he had tired himſelf with beating and kicking his Carkaſs, he did let him riſe, the fellow for all his ſeeming reſolution at firſt took this baſting very patiently, and would have been gone willingly to avoid the ſecond part of the ſame tune, had not the Tapſter laid hold on him, ſaying, *Nay faith t'other box in the ear, and 'tother kick on the breech, and go and be damn'd*, ſo lifting his hand up, gave him a cuff on the face, that by the Noiſe of what

dropt

dropt out of his Mouth, I verily believe he had not only ſtruck out all his teeth, but had alſo fractur'd in pieces his jaw-bones; but I ſoon was convinced of the contrary, when I lookt on the Ground, for there lay the Mony ſcattered which in his Mouth he had ſecured. I never ſtood conſidering what was to be done, ſince I ſaw a little time was ſoon loſt, ſo that blowing out the Candle, I fell a ſcrambling with the Tapſter, who had got the ſtart of me, however I made my party good with him, and was not behind with him in my ſhare, and ſo ſlipt out, leaving the poor fellow to hold his bleeding chops, which were cut through by a piece of Money, and the Tapſter in *tenebris* to ſum up his loſſes. Leaving this Town I found that *I* had more Money going out of it than I brought into it, and ſo I merrily rode on to *Newberry*. Here my jaded Beaſt gave up the Ghoſt, it was time for us to part, far we were both weary of one the other. Money ſoon procured me the ſight of another, but exceeding different from the former, as the one was exceeding dull and heavy, this was all air, and fiery, no ground would hold him as it is uſually ſaid; this Horſe was brought me to look on, the Seller riding him in my ſight with all the ſtudied advantages a double Jury of Jockies could invent; diſmounting, I was deſired to make tryal of him my ſelf, which I had no mind to do, for I diſlik'd that in him, which another would have liked extremely, his extraordinary mettle, however, that I might not be laught at, I adventured to croſs his back, but I was ſcarce ſettled in the Saddle, when this underſtanding Beaſt knowing by my ſitting him, that he had a fooliſh and unskilful governour to deal withal, grew head-

ſtrong, flew away with me like lightning, for my part I thought I had got the *Devil* between my leggs, and that I was riding Poſt upon ſome Helliſh deſign. I knew quickly whom I had to deal withal, a thing that would have his will, and therefore thought it a piece of imprudence to curb his extravagant running; knowing well that that pace would not laſt alwayes.

I gave him his head, let him go which way, and as faſt as he pleaſed; in troth he was better acquainted with the Road than his Maſter, and would not be perſwaded out on't by any ſuch ignorant Hawl-bowling as my ſelf; that night my Horſe, and I, (for I muſt give his Horſeſhip the preheminence) came to *Marlbrough*; entring the Town, he went directly to his Inn, and was known to the Hoſtler, calling him by ſome familiar term, I know not what now; and askt me whether the Horſe was mine, I replyed that he was ſo, that I had bought him the day before at *Newberry*: and why ſhould not I own him, ſince he intitled me by running away with me, not I with him; and ſince by an unexpected chance I had a benefit thrown into hands, I was reſolved to make uſe of it, and ſo I did for the next day, very early I rode away with him for *Briſtol*, never hearing of the right owner ſince: his heat and fury by this time were pretty well qualified, and could ride him then my own pace, where as before I would willingly condeſcend to have had a leg or an arm broke, to have ſecured the bone of my neck.

Briſtol, the place of my nativity I entred with a ſtrange confidence, if you remember how I was born,

and

and what roguiſh exploits I acted during my abode in that City; but as good luck would have it, as length of time had altered my countenance, ſo it had quite obliterated the memory of my former nefarious actions. Here did I ſpend my Money in all manner of riot and exceſs, finding a many jovial boon blades, although for the moſt part very ſtrict and preciſe; and though none are permitted any thing late to tipple, yet there is time enough in the day to ſpend the Cargo of an *Eaſt-India-man*, eſpecially if a man hath nothing elſe to do. The natural love I had to this place made me inſenſibly ſtay much longer than I intended, and though I was ſome weeks there, nothing occur'd worth the taking notice of, but furniſhing my ſelf with a pair of Bootes. My money began to grow ſomewhat low, ſo that I ſaw there was a neceſſity of removing thence; the inconveniencies I was put to for want of Boots, made me reſolve to try how I might procure them without either money or credit; I ponder'd with my ſelf, and took many a walk in the *Marſh*, yet could project no feaſible way to obtain my ends. I pitcht upon this at laſt; evening the account with my Landlord, I cauſed the Hoſtler to ſaddle my Horſe and bring him out, mounting, I rid him to a quite contrary part of the City, where I lay, (my lodging was near the Caſtle, and I rode to the higher end of *Ratcliff-ſtreet,*) near the Gate, I tyed my Horſe, and walkt down again backward where I obſerved ſome Shooe-makers, entring one of their Shops, I askt the Maſter thereof to ſhew me ſome Boots he did, and withal fitted me; having both the Boots on, I talked to him about the price, I refuſing to give ſo much ſince they were too dear, he proteſting

ſting on the other ſide that he would not abate a farthing, ſtepping to the Threſhold (as if I intended to ſettle my feet in them) I ſtarted, though not fairly, running with all my ſpeed, the Shooe-maker thought it was to no boot for him to ſtand ſtill, whilſt I was in action; wherefore leaving his ſhop, he betook himſelf to his heels, crying out as he ran, *ſtop him, ſtop him*; *Stop me not*, quoth I, *we run for a Wager, and I give him the advantage of running in Shooes againſt my ſelf in theſe heavy Boots*; hearing me ſay ſo, they gave way which I repeated to every one as I came near them; they encouraging me, crying out, *O brave Boots, O brave Boots*; Others animating the other with *O brave Shooes, O brave Shooes*; getting to my Horſe, I mounted him, and without Spurs, for he needed none, I rode clear through *Ratcliff gate*, and was ſoon out of ſight, and never ſince heard of my Shooe-maker.

I was reſolved to croſs the Counrey for my better ſecuring my ſelf from my Horſe-merchant, and ſo directed my Courſe to *Exeter*, where I was reſolved to continue till I had increaſed my ſtore. I was fearful of venturing on Robbing, and therefore my deſign was ſolely bent on cheating, having not been yet arrived to the height of underſtanding the ruinating Myſtery of Gaming; my Land-lord was a very jolly aſſociate, and delighted much in my company in that I fitted his humour ſo well: we often walkt together, and by our converſe broad grew intimately familiar, inſomuch that if I were in the houſe, he was hardly out of my company. Frequently we diverted our ſelves with *Tom Fools Games*, as they call them, *Dubblets*,

Size

Size Ace, *Back Sir Hugh*, *Catch Dolt*, &c. For neither of us could play at any thing elſe with the Dice, unleſs *Old Sim.*

It was my good fortune one day to play with him for a bottle of Wine at *Siſe Ace*, which I won of him, and after that another, and in concluſion ſo many, that we were forced to call for aſſiſtance, which we could not want long, if men in this latter Age did not Apoſtatize by declining the powerful invitations of good wine. Theſe Spungers by exhauſting our Liquor inflamed the Reckoning, and that ſtill kindled in us a deſire to play on: I was the ſole Conquerour; and ſeeing that he could not deal with me for the Reckoning, he propounded to me whether I would play with him for a Teſter, I ſeeing how vext he was that he had loſt ſo many Bottles, conſented to humour him in any thing that was reaſonable, not believing but that fortune would not withdraw her wonted favours from me. He loſing ſtill; from ſix pence, we doubled the ſtakes, and to be ſhort, we gradually augmented them till we played for an Angel a Game, (may they always be tutelary to me, and be my Guardians from the inſufferable torments of a deſpicable neceſſity,) from an Angel, to a Piece, till I had left him not a Piece to play with me, having won threeſcore and upward, Being a young man, he begg'd of me to conceal his loſs, leſt by the Proclaiming my good ſucceſs, I detriment his credit; for he was ſo rational as to know that Gaming, as it ſurely ſtabs a mans Reputation, ſo in proceſs of time it will cut the throat of his Eſtate, though very conſiderable.

I promiſed him I would do it though to no purpoſe, for

for the Standers by were the Publiſhers of thoſe ill tidings, which will ſpread abroad themſelves like a Peſtilence. Now I thought it highly requiſite to put my ſelf into a better garb, and inveſt my ſelf with ſuch ornaments as might become a Gentleman, which I intended to perſonate. I accommodated my ſelf with a Sword, and did not forget Spurs to my new Boots. Being thus bravely equipt *Cap a pee*; I grew weary of this City, and ſo left it, and my Landlord to his better Fortune.

The next place I ſet up my Standard, was in *Salisbury*; my generous deportment and gallant habiliments adapted me for the beſt of company, and the relation of my Travails, not as a *Tarpawlin*, but a wealthy young Heir, did infinitely pleaſe them: So that if I were in a Coffee-houſe at any time, though I entred in ſingly, I ſhould have it filled with variety of Gueſts to hear thoſe *admiranda* wonderful things that I had obſerved abroad: I was the Mouth of the houſe, and what I reported was received as an Oracle, I made two Fellows one time confidently believe, that *Pindennis* Caſtle, if well mann'd and rigg'd, would make a brave Man of War of the Frſt Rate, and that *Pen-men maure* in *VVales*, and *Hoath* in *Ireland* were nere met in conſultation how to prevent the turbulency of their Northern neighbourhood from incroaching on their Trade of *Herring-Fiſhing*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

At Salisbury *he comes acquainted with a young man, who relates to him the* Breviate *of his life, and inſtructs him in the moſt uſual Games at Dice, with all the ſubtle deceivers that belong to them, and the dangers that attend them, with a ſhort account of their Practitioners.*

MY Reputation in this City increaſed daily, ſo that I was now at liberty to pick and chooſe, my company, I mean from the middle ſort of people, which I knew how to delude, whereas I was not ſo ignorant, but that men of better breeding and learning would by my diſcolouring, Sea-faring hands, and illiterate tongue find out the impoſture of my crafty pretences. I had a ſufficient ſtock of confidence to manage thoſe natural parts which ſome (flatteringly I doubt) highly commended. The younger ſort of People were the Perſons I ſelected to aſſociate my ſelf withal, and had in that little time gain'd ſo large an intereſt in them, that he offered me too little, I ſhould have thought, that would think to buy my propriety therein for an hundred a year. Hunting and Hawking were my dayly Recreations; when we returned home, Drinking and Whoring were our nightly exerciſes; and becauſe I was a ſtranger as I had the preheminence in moſt things, ſo I always paid the leaſt ſhare of any in the reckoning.

There was one ſtrange Gentleman who uſually accompanied us, whom I particularly obſerved to have more

more than common qualifications; quick-witted, well ſpoken, ſung incomparably, but had the repute of a notorious Gameſter; and well he might, for he had bit both City and Countrey of conſiderable ſums, ſo that now being generally known for a Rook, none durſt play with him, yet fancied his company very much. This Gentleman I ſingled out, and diſcourſt him throughly as to every thing: And that I might engage him to a greater freedom, I forged ſeveral lies, charging him with ſecrecy; this ſeeming unboſoming my ſelf obliged him to give me an account of what he was, and for what reaſons he came there in this manner.

Sir, ſaid he, *I was formerly an Apprentice in* London, *and by reaſon of my Maſters covetous and ill nature and ſeverity from him, I had not ſerved him two years e're I was upon the ramble, (a term of Art frequently uſed amongſt us;) my Parents with ſome charge and much intreaty ſawdred up this firſt crack; but this ſore was not ſo well cured, but by reaſon of the inward corruption it broke out again, and now was the Malady worſe than ever, for my Maſter would not receive me on any terms, notwithſtanding the various perſwaſions of my friends for that purpoſe. My Relations ſeeing this, and being throughly perplex't exerciſed all their paſſions on me, and inſtead of reducing me, took a courſe to ruine and deſtroy me: for they ſeemingly caſt me out of all favour, which I judged to be real, and having no other dependance than my Wits (my poverty having frighted all my former friends from coming near me,) I reſolved for a ſuſtenance to make what uſe I could of them.*

A

As long as my mony lasted, I frequented all places for Gaming exercises, and now and then some Bawdy-houses, in which I had goten a large acquaintance; but having spent all I had, I could get no credit among them, only in one house, where they had so much credulity to believe my Lies to be infallible Truths, and that I should receive in a little time those several Sums were due to me abroad, and would have the honesty to pay my large account. Money not coming as they expected, laid an Action on my back, and threw me into Goal. where I suffered more than tongue can utter; but I shall not disclose the name of this Gaoler, since I shall give you an account of some lines I wrote on him whilst I was his Prisoner, which were these;

This Gaoler sure the Devil gave him birth,
For no such Fury hath his seat on Earth:
A Cannibal which eats the Flesh of Men,
And being gorged, spews them up again.
A Monster that the old World never knew,
Of late produc'd by a litigious crew,
Spawn of a Syren and Leviathan:
Part Fish, part Fowl, part Devil, and part Man.
He Swallows down the poor, as Crows do Frogs,
And makes no more of Men, than Men of Dogs.
The Pris'ner ends his days in toil and sweat,
To fill the Cabbins of his Cabbinet.
This Cash being ravisht from his reaking brow,
Will be all spent the Devil knows not how.
His Celler's Hell, he lives by other's sin.
And cares not who doth loose so he may win.
His Beds are dearer than a Bawdy-house.
There you may have a Whore, but here a Louse.

This

This is that Hell-hound for to ſum up all,
Who is both Monſter, Devil, and Cannibal.

In this ſtinking place I ſtayed ſo long till I was almoſt ſtarved, yet though I had nothing to feed on, I had daily a thouſand which fed on me. The Daughter of my mercileſs Creditor hearing the miſerableneſs of my condition gave me a viſit, and ſupplyed me with ſome Money for the preſent, and repeating her viſits, pity did at laſt turn into affection; this Love ſoon ſeeded into Matrimony; for ſhe was her Mothers Darling, and could perſwade her to any thing, and ſo it proved, for ſhe ſo prevailed, that I was diſcharged of my Debt, Fees paid, new Cloaths bought, and we incontinently marryed. I knew her to be a Whore, but neceſſity forced me to do what I *did, or I muſt have periſht.*

My Wife on the Bridal night expected no new thing from me, but a new faſhioned duty; for ſhe told me, if I expected to command, I was groſly miſtaken; that ſhe raiſed me not out of that Tomb I muſt have lain buryed in to my lives end, for that purpoſe, ſhe knew how to rule her own affairs without my aſſiſtance, however ſhe could not but acknowledge that man was a neceſſary implement in a Family, if it were but to cloak his Wives imperfections; To be ſhort, Sir, I was only a Titular maſter, but a real Pimp and Cuckold; I bore all with a world of patience, ſtill waiting an opportunity to get what I could, and march off: which fell out as happily as I could wiſh; for the Houſe was noted to be a place of debauchery, and whilſt my mother in Law was condemned for a damn'd Bawd, and my Wife for an errant piece of impudence, I was pityed by all as one drawn in and undone by them both.

Officers

Officers in fine ſeiſed them; and carried them to Bridewel, *being both ſafe from interrupting my fixed reſolution, I ranſackt the houſe, taking what Moneys I found, and ſelling what would yield me any, I betook my ſelf to this place, the remoteneſs whereof from my former habitation affording me a very convenient refuge. Whilſt I have been in theſe parts I have not expended my time idly; for in Gaol and elſewhere I have learned moſt knacks in playing I have ever heard of, and have practiced them in many places very advantagiouſly, for I was a while of a Gang that ſtroled all the Countrey over, to all the great Fairs in* England, *reſorting thither as conſtantly, as ſuch Tradeſmen who make it their buſineſs to obſerve them, exerciſing their cheating faculties on all they can pick up fit for their company: the reaſon why they go three or four in Company, is, that if any conteſt in playing ſhould ariſe, or any oppoſition ſhould be made, they may be the better able to defend their Roguery. Beſides, if they ſhould miſs of a prize, and be ſmoakt as* Gameſters, *they are then ſtrong enough for miſchiefs of another nature, as* Padding, Ken-milling, *&c. and indeed let me tell you, there is no profeſt Villain which hath not a very great inſight in* Gaming, *and know not only what advantages naturally accrue from every* Game, *but know how to make them when occaſion ſhall require.*

Since my coming hither I have very illy managed my ſucceſſes; for I have won too many times without the interpoſition of one ſingle loſs of my own, which hath raiſed in my Gameſters *a ſuſpition of me not to be taken off; by which means I have loſt all future hopes of bubbling them any more; But ſince, Sir, you ſtand fair in their good opinion, if you pleaſe to let me ſhare with you,*

you, I ſhall inform you not only with my Art, but alſo furniſh you with Tools which ſhall effect our deſign and increaſe our ſtore. But before I ſhall encourage you to learn that which I now propound for your profit, give me leave to acquaint you with the inconveniencies dangers, and perplexities which attend Gaming, leſt hereafter you condemn me for your raſh learning that which you would have trampled under your feet, had you known the many dangerous concovitants which continually wait thereon.

To ſpeak generally, Gaming is an enchanting Witchery begot betwixt a couple of Devils, Idleneſs and Avarice: it ſo infatuates man, that it renders him incapable of proſecuting his more ſerious affairs, and makes him to quarrel with his condition though ever ſo good: if he wins, the ſucceſs ſo elevates him, that his mad joys carry him to the height of all exceſſes; if he loſes, his misfortune plunges him to the bottom of Deſpair. Oh how I have ſeen a man caſt up his eyes, as if he intended to call Heaven to account for its injuſtice, in not giving him that Caſt he ſo much deſires. Nay, I heard one of no ſmall note in an ordinary publickly invoke the Devil, (upon his throwing at all, that is all the men lies on the Table) that he would turn up Five, which was his Chance, and he ſhould have his Soul for the next throw, an expreſſion enough to make the hair of the vildeſt reprobate to ſtand an end.

It was ſaid of one, that nec bonam, nec malam fortunam ferre poteſt, *that both in good and bad fortune he was ever reſtles.* Marcellus *could neither be quiet as Conquerour, nor overcome. Thus ſuch is the damn'd itch of Play, Gameſters are never ſatisfyed winning or looſing, if they win, they hope to increaſe their*

their ſtore, if they looſe their Money they hope to recover it again.

The queſtion was wittily propounded by one, whether Men in a Ship at Sea were to be accounted inter mortuos, vel vivos, *among the living, or the dead, becauſe there were but few Inches between them and drowning.* The Quære *is not improper to be made of great Gameſters, though their Eſtates be never ſo conſiderable, whether they are to be eſteemed* Divites vel Pauperes, *poor or rich, ſince there are but a few Caſts at Dice betwixt a perſon of Fortune, (in that circumſtance) and a Begger.*

Now if you intend to be a Gamſter, *what ever your ſucceſs be, you muſt bear it* æquo animo, *neither raiſed or depreſſed; but I will aſſure you that it is a difficult matter ſo to do, for this courſe of life will try your patience. VVould it not mad you to have ſo ſtrange a fortune, as with a very ſmall Sum to run up to Eighteen hundred pounds, and looſe it again with his ſmall ſtock in leſs than three days? I knew one with Fifty Shillings, win Five hundred pounds of his own at one time in his life, and thereupon putting himſelf into a Garb not miſ-becoming an Earl, played again, the Dice ran againſt him, loſt every penny he had, or could borrow; hereupon he grew ſtark mad, and hang'd himſelf in his own Bed-cord.* There *are as many examples of this nature as would ſtuff a Quire of Paper, and as many as would fill a Ream of ſuch who having had fair Eſtates, in few years have loſt them at Play, and dyed in want and Penury. I have heard it credibly reported, that a* Gentleman *belonging to the* Six Clerks Office, *who was only well cliented, but had a good Eſtate of his*

own, and by him always a conſiderable ſum of Money; this Gentleman was invited to play by ſome young Gallants that had a great deſire to be fingring his Jacobus's *with whom he engaged, and by extraordinary fortune won two thouſand pieces of Gold, was not content with that round ſum, but plaid on, loſt all, with his own Eſtate, ſold his place in the Office; and loſt that too; at laſt, through exceſſive grief, he tranſported himſelf to a Forreign Plantation, where, if his diſcontent diſpatch him not, he muſt be forced to Hoe for a livelihood. This commonly is the deſtiny of a decayed Gameſter, if not this, he is ſeldom preferr'd higher than to the dignity of a Box keeper.*

Laſtly, before you take the Dice in your hand, think of drawing your Sword before you leave off Playing; for ſhould you play upon the Square, you will be ſuſpected by thoſe that looſe, you have knapt, or put the change of the Dice upon them; then right or wrong they will quarrel with you, more for the vexation of the loſs, than for any juſt cauſe they had for ſo doing: If you do not fall together by the ears then in the very heat, you will have affronts enough to engage you in the Field next morning, upon ſome trifling inſignificant occaſion, deem'd as a punctilio *of Honour, or elſe timely put up thoſe abuſes which will occaſion you to be ſcorn'd and ſlighted, and at laſt piſt on as you walk the ſtreets by every Party Coat coloured Skip-kennel.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

An account of Play, with ſeveral remarkable Occurrences.

THus I *have told you what you muſt expect, and now I ſhall inform you what to do; but if e're you think to be complete in this occult Art, you muſt by frequent trials reduce my Theory into your Practice.*

In the firſt place, take this as a Maxim, *never Play, but when you are ſure to win and that you might not fail thereof, have you Dice about you continually of all ſorts, which you may buy in* London *at ſeveral places ready made to your hand, but very dear: It may be when you are in the Countrey, you connot be ſupplied from thence ſo ſpeedily as your urgent affairs require, and therefore I would have you make them your ſelf.*

There are Fullams *of two ſorts, which you may make run high or low, that is,* 6, 5, 4, *or* 3, 2, 1. *either by drilling holes in the black ſpots, and load them with Quick-Silver, ſtopping up again the ſaid holes again with Pitch, or filling the Corners of the Dice. You may procure alſo, (which you muſt have Implements as neceſſary in your intended Profeſſion, as Tools are for any working occupation) I ſay, there are Dice which you may get, which will run nothing but a Siſe, another a Cinque, another a* Quatre, &c. *which are very uſeful at Tables; for if you want a Cinque, or ſo to enter at* Back gammon *or* Iriſh, *hitting that Blot at an after-game, you recover again, and ten to one but you win the Game; beſides, it is uſeful for a ſingle Hit*

at Ticktack, *or for taking points, by joyning two together of a different ſort.*

In caſe of neceſſity if you have none of theſe artificial helps about you, then your hand muſt ſupply your wants, by Palming the Die; that is, having your Box in your hand, you take up both the Dice as they are thrown nimbly within the hollow of your hand, and put but one into the Box, reſerving the other in your Palm, obſerving with a quick eye what ſide was upward, and ſo accordingly conform the next throw to your purpoſe, by delivering that in the Box, and the other in your hand ſmoothly together. You muſt ſometimes uſe Topping; that is, by pretending to put both Dice into the Box, whereas you have dropt but one, holding the other between your fore-fingers, which your turn to your advantage. Knapping, is when you ſtrike one Die dead, either at Tables or Hazzard let the other run a Milſtone, as we uſe to ſay. Slurring, is when you throw your Dice ſo ſmoothly on the Table that they turn not, for which purpoſe you muſt endeavour to chooſe your Table or the ſmootheſt part thereof. There are very few that can ſecure more than one Die, but I have known ſome ſo excellent at it, that they would ſlurr a Siſe without turning above a yard in length; others I have known, who could ſecure two Dice in three at Paſſage, but that is ſeldom ſeen. I have heard of ſome ſo dextrous in caſting the Dice, that they would throw when they pleaſed leſs than Ames Ace, *through the handle of a Quart Pot.*

Hazzard, In and In, *and* Paſſage *are the principal Games in an Ordinary, you may find Profeſſors enough thereof every where elſe, wherefore it is requiſite to paſs through*

through these several Clashes for fear of being Crossbitten or bubbled by some other dexterity, of which they have variety unimaginable. Hazzard, *is a Game that maketh a quick riddance on one side or other, and therfore it hath not its name given improperly; for it terminateth speedily, in Setting or Buttring (a term of art is used among us,) one or other is blown up immediately.*

A Main *at* Hazzard, *is that cast of the Die which is thrown first, but then it must be above Four, and less than Ten, otherwise it is no Main; so that hence you may understand there are five Mains,* 5, 6, 7, 8, *and* 9. *to these Mains there are seven Chances,* 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. *and* 10. Ames, Ace, *and* Duce Ace, *are general outs or losses to them all; Eleven is out to* 5, 6, 8, *or* 9; Twelve *is out to* 5, 7, *or* 9; *but it nicks* 6, *or* 8, *as* 11, *doth* 7, *and so doth* 5, *nick* 5, *and so on to* 9; *after the second throw, the cast that comes first wins. At* Hazzard, *the cunning Gamester will pray it may be Quatre Ace against Cinque Duce, or Tray Ace against Cinque Tray; you had need be well verst before you meddle with this, it being very hazzardous. Though twenty at a Table set you, you may knock with your Box but at one, and then all the rest draw their Money; as many as you knock to you must pay if you loose; if you throw at all, winning, you sweep all; O the sweet that is in that throw, when a man upon the success of that nick shall boldly cry* more Money Gentlemen, *although the Table is covered with Half-Crowns. If you sett, and the Caster refuse you, if another* cover *you, and you accept thereof, it is one and the same thing.*

At In and In *you play with four Dice, you may drop*

from one ſhilling to a pound; In, *is when any two Doublets appear*: *Out*, *when none*; In and In, *when three Aces*, *three Duces*, *&c. or four of one ſort.*

At Paſſage *you are to play with three* Dice; *you cannot Paſs unleſs you throw Doublets above Nine*, *leſs than nine you are out*; *all other throws ſignifying nothing*, *you muſt throw on. What other criticiſmes and crotchets there are in theſe Games*, *you cannot underſtand*, *otherwiſe than by obſervation in your practice*; *but as I told you at firſt*, *it is beſt not to meddle with it at all.*

Hereupon my Gentleman took ſeveral Dice out of his Pocket, and throwing them, I ſaw he could make them run as he liſted; my fingers itched to be at the ſport, ſo that I ſpent the moſt part of every day in conſulting what advantages I could find out in Play: nay, in the very night I was never at reſt for dreaming of theſe confounded Devils bones: the indefatigable pains, I took (to find out the ready way to my deſtruction,) made me ſpeedily an accompliſht Gameſter; and to ſhew my Maſter how I had improv'd my ſelf from his dictations, I engaged with him at ſingle hand, he entring the Liſt with me, found himſelf equally, if not overmatcht.

Hereupon he perſwaded me to ſtudy how I might contrive an opportunity to Play, when at one bout we might both ſow and reap a plentiful crop, that might help to a future maintenance. The Plott I laid at a Gentlemans Houſe five miles diſtance from *Salisbury*, where I was invited to be merry, with orders to bring what friends I pleaſed with me; you may be ſure I carried none but what had Money enough, o-

ther-

therwiſe no company for me. Being met together, we were very jovial, and amidſt our cups, I propounded to throw with Dice, who ſhould drink a Glaſs; it was agreed on; being all half boozie, I made another propoſition to play at *Hazzard* round for a Crown and no farther; this motion took as well as the former, and to work we went.

To be ſhort, I won all their Moneys, hardly leaving our Entertainer a penny in the Houſe; and fearing he ſhould recruit the next day, and ſo farther engage me, my new Comrade perſwaded me to trip off, and ſhare, for it was reaſonable he ſhould go ſnips with me; I therefore cauſed my Horſe to be brought forth, and notwithſtanding the many thouſand perſwaſions to the contrary, (rewarding the Servants,) I took my leave of them, promiſing to give what Revenge they pleaſed the next day, but that was none of our intent, for early the next morning, we with our booty rode for *London*.

CHAP. XVII.

They go for London, *one is apprehended and the other in his flight caſually doth two or three miſchiefs; the ſtrange diſcovery of a Murther of ſeventeen years ſtanding.*

HEre puft up with good fortune, we ſcattered our Moneys up and down the City, trampling the ſtreets in terrour and huffing after a ſtrange rate; but coming along by *South-Hampton* Building an aged Matron ſeized on my Elbow-ſhaking Companion,

crying out this is the Rogue that robb'd me; I hearing that betook my ſelf to my heels fearing leſt being found in his company, I might be taken up for his accounts in the Theft. I made more haſt than good ſpeed it ſeems, for in my flight I bore down all that oppoſed me; inſomuch that a poor Woman with a basket of Eggs ſtanding in my way, I overthrew her and breaking her Eggs utterly undid the Woman, her whole ſtock conſiſting in that basket. A fellow ſeeing this endeavoured to lay hold on me, but I ſtruggling to disingage my ſelf from him puſht him forward on his Noſe and falling, fell into an old Womans deep Codling Pan up to the Armpits, it being almoſt full of newly ſcalded apples, never was Codlings ſo handled, nor man ſo becodled as he was, the almoſt boyling water ſo tormented him, that he roared as bad as the fellow which was incloſed in *Phalarus* his Bull; fearing the miſchief I had done I added new wings to my ſpeed, but not looking before me, I ran directly againſt a Ladder in my way, on which there was a labouring man carrying up Morter to the top, but he was ſtopt in his intent, for though he went up by the Ladder, he came down without a Roop, his Morter falling on the heads of four finical Gentlewomen as they paſt by, who now might properly be called Morter-Pieces, the Ladder fell eaſily and gradually from the houſe to a Sign-Poſt, the Man holding faſt by one of the rounds, this while receiving little or no dammage, to the wonder and aſtoniſhment of all the Spectators. However I was detain'd, and none coming againſt me, nor accuſing me for any thing but the Woman with her Eggs, and the old Woman for the dammage ſhe had ſuſtained by the maſh-

ing

ing of her Codlings; the fellow for being ſcalded by them, and this man that charged me moſt with ſuppoſition of looſing his life by my means I was diſmiſt, giving to each what ſatisfaction I Judged convenient.

What became of my *Come-at ſeven* I know not, but glad I was to be clear'd from this fright: thus it is to have a guilty Conſcience; a man I have heard of, who flew in a Moon-ſhine night from his own ſhaddow, thinking it to be a Devil that haunted his wicked carcaſs: Another more remarkable I have heard much talk of, who having murdered a man in *London*, fled into Forreign Parts, and living to and fro eighteen years, returning home again as he walked one day through *Cheap-ſide*, he heard a cry behind him, ſtop him, ſtop him, ſeeing a great quantity of People making towards him, preſently fell a running with all the ſpeed he could, the rabble ſeeing two run as if it were for their lives, divided themſelves and in their purſuit they took the Thief they chiefly run after, and ſe zing the Gentleman who run they knew not for what, he cryed out, pray be civil Gentlemen it is confeſt I am the man; upon farther enquiry found him from his own mouth to be a Murderer of near twenty years ſtanding.

Gaming had ſo general a poſſeſſion of me, that I could think of nothing elſe, and becauſe I could not always meet in my ramble in the City with ſuch as ſuited my purpoſe: I frequented Ordinaries where I never miſt of good chear, nor variety of Company. For about one of the Clock you are ſure to have an excellent dinner provided by way of ordinary; where you ſhall have ſo many choice diſhes and wine,

that

that the Maſter is always a looſer in his entertainment what cares he for that? the box ſhall make all good again. Gentlemen of quality and civility frequent this Table, and after dinner will play a while for Recreation moderately and commonly without deſerving reproof, but the generality of ſuch as meet there are *Wit-ſhifters*. Some have frequented the houſe to eat only there being ſuch excellent proviſion, and cheaper then they can get elſewhere, and never play at all only look on, but being once taken notice of they ſhall have ſmall encouragement to come again.

Here I came acquainted and did ſo commonly frequent all houſes of this function, that I ſhall endeavour to give you an account of what I either acted or obſerved in the time of my converſe amongſt theſe Eſquires of the Elbow.

CHAP. XVIII.

He here diſcovers the cheats of Gameing, the Nature and quality of an Ordinary, relating what manner of Perſons they are which frequent it, with many pleaſant ſtories intermixt, with a dehortation from playing at Dice.

ALL the day long there is not much playing in an Ordinary, what there is, is amongſt Gentlemen and the more civiliz'd ſort of Perſons, but towards Night theſeHouſes are throng'd with People of all ſorts and qualities and then when ravenous Beaſts uſually ſeek their prey, their comes in Shoals of Hectors, Trappanners, Guilts, Pads, Biters, Priggs; Divers,

Divers, Lifters, Kidnappers, Vouchers, Mill-Kens, Decoys, Shop-lifters, Foilers, Bulkers, Droppers, Ramblers, Dounakers and Crosbyters, *&c.* All theſe may be ranked under the general appellation of *Rooks*, this is the Field where the ſeed of Hemp is ſown, and grows till the Gallows groans for it, this is *Tyburns* Nurſery, for yearly ſome or other of this curſed gang go thither.

The firſt day I entred this *School of Vertue*, I commenced Maſter of Arts, and would not eaſily be confuted with their Sophiſtry, but when young Gentlemen Prentices or Caſheers come hither unskil'd in the quibbles and devices here practiſed they call him a Lamb, then ſtraitways a Rook (or more properly a Wolf) follows him cloſe, and engages him in advantagious betts, and at length worries him, that is he ſo fleeceth him as not to leave him a penny, and then the ſnearing dogs will laughingly ſay ſee the Lamb is bitten.

Some of theſe Rooks or Rogues if they perceive you to be full of Money, though they never ſaw you before, will impudently and importunately ſtrive to borrow Money of you without the leaſt intention of repaying, if you ſhould be ſo facile as to do it, or to go with you when you are playing at Hazzard ſeven to twelve half a crown, which is more then ten to one if you deny them their unreaſonable requeſt, you ſhall find them ſometimes very angry. Others will watch when you are ſerious at your Game whether your Sword hangs looſe behind that they may lift that away, others will not ſcruple if they find an opportunity to pick your pocket directly, if theſe projects fail, then have at your Gold Buttons, if you have any on your Cloak,

Cloak, or ſteal the Cloak it ſelf, if it either lye looſe or careleſs. But above all they have a trick you cannot avoid, which is to throw at your Money with a *dry Fiſt* (as they term it) that is if they nick you (*id eſt* win) 'tis theirs, if they looſe they owe you ſo much, if you demand your money they will peremptorily tell you anon will ſerve turn, and then it may be a Raſcally Boxkeeper that uſually ſnips with him, ſhall excuſe him, ſaying he is a very honeſt Gentleman, Sir you need not miſtruſt him, whereas he knows no body will truſt him with a *Newgate* groat, if you chance to nick them, its ten to one but they will wait your coming out at night and beat you ſoundly.

I ſaw a couple of blades (Gentilely garb'd) enter one evening the Ordinary; they were lookers on a while, at length there being a vacant Room, one of them pulls the chair and ſits down, as the box came ſtill round he paſſed it, doing it ſo often ſaid one angerly, if you will not throw ſir what ſit you there for? hereupon he ſnatcht up the box, ſaying, ſet me what you will Sir I will throw at it, the other hearing him ſay ſo, did ſet him two Guinneys, which he nickt, the Gentleman being vext did ſet him four more, with a round parcel of Silver, which he won alſo. Now did the whole Table concern themſelves buttering him, that is, doubling or trebbling what they did ſet before, yet could not turn his hand, which was ſo ſucceſsful that he held in eleven mains together, and juſt as he had almoſt broke the Table he chanc't to throw out, having got his hat full of Money he aroſe from the Table and went to the fire with his Comrade, who asked him how he durſt be ſo impudently bold to adventure after that manner knowing he had not a Croſs about

about him to bleſs himſelf with all; how is that ſaid one of the looſers who overheard what was ſaid, had you no Money when you went to play, it matters not replied the winner I have enough now, had I loſt having not wherewithal to pay you, why then ye muſt have been content to kick me ſo long till ye ſhould ſay your ſelves ye were ſatisfied; beſides Sir I am a Souldier, and have paſt through many a brunt, venturing my life hard for eight pence a day, and do you think now I would not hazard a kicking or a pumping for ſo many fair pounds, all that were there concerned ſmiled at his confidence, but he laught heartily at their folly and his own good fortune. *Well may he laugh that wins.*

Did you but ſee what paſſions and how divers effects do vary men into ſeveral poſtures, you would abſolutely conclude the place to be *Bedlam* inſtead of an Ordinary; you may obſerve one looſing to gnaw the box in pieces, or take the ſawcer of Dice and throw it over his head, whilſt the winning caſter ſmiles and is merry as a Bee, another you may ſee who hath loſt all his Money, ſtanding like *Pontius Pilate* in the old Primmer, or like ſome antick figure in a ſuit of hangings as motion-leſs and almoſt as live-leſs.

A Gentleman I took notice of one day, who looſing (what moneys he had about him) ſate very penſively, in ſteps a young blade in this interval and briskly took up the box, but it came not to his hands above thrice, before he had loſt all he brought in with him, which ſo inraged the Noddy that he behaved himſelf like a meer frantick Fellow, ſwearing Damme was not I a villain in leſs then an hour to looſe four pouuds,

this

this melancholly perſon hearing him ſwear and fret for a ſum ſo inconſiderable to what he had loſt, Damm you (ſaid he) Damme that have loſt fourſcore pounds in half an hour, it ſeems the greater looſer thought it a piece of injuſtice the leſſer ſhould be damn'd before him. Frequent are the quarrels in this place occaſioned by the heat of Wine before they came in or by loſs made chollerick afterwards; *Swords* commonly drawn, or boxes and Candleſticks thrown at one anothers heads; ſometimes the Rooks will raiſe a ſeeming feud (eſpecially when their ſtocks are low) when they ſee a Table covered with money, which may give them an occaſion to ſcramble; ſuch are the uſual garboyls in this place that they form a perfect type of Hell.

I cannot forbear ſmiling when I think of a certain paſſage one time at an Ordinary. A Gentleman who was well ſtored with Gold played high, and in a little time had not one penny left, he firſt ſplits the Box, & then Box the Box-keeper having ſo done, takes off his own hat from his head which was black, dame, ſaid he, who dares ſay this hat is not white, he is a ſon of a whor that will not ſay ſo, the ſtanders by ſeeing his loſs had made him mad, replyed not a word; he perceiving on the other ſide that none would quarrel with him, ſeats himſelf, and fell faſt aſleep; another Gentleman who had loſt as much or more than the former came to him who ſlept, and awakeing him, what is that you ſaid Sir, is your black hat white, it's a damn'd lye, I ſay it's blew, deny it if you dare. The Gentleman was well pleaſed to ſee one madder then himſelf, and therefore without paſſion deſired him to go and ſleep as he had done, and on his awaking they

they ſhould not differ about the colour, into what what franzies do theſe damn'd Dice put men into?

When late at night and the Company grows thin and your eyes dim with watching, then is the time for falſe Dice to be put on the ignorant, then alſo is there a ſecurity in, Palming, Topping, Slurring, *&c.*

There are a certain ſort of gentle and ſubtle Rooks whoſe outſide ſpeaks as much a Gentleman as moſt of the firſt magnitude, This Cunningham ſeldom plays in an Ordinary, yet will ſit there a whole evening to the intent he may obſerve who winns, if conſiderable, and the winner ſeem Plyable, generous, and Bubbable, he will ſome way or other inſinuate into his acquaintance by applauding his happy hand, congratulating his ſucceſs *&c.* and then familiarly, yet civily prompt him to a glaſs of Wine that they may drink to the continuance of that good fortune.

Having gotten him to the Tavern he is ſure to wheadle him into Play, and by hook or by crook (as we uſe to ſay) he is ſure to winn ſome if not all his money; and that he may not be ſuſpected for not playing ſquarely he will (if he be ſure of his bubble) looſe conſiderably ſometimes, but in the long run he is ſure to recover it again. I was ſeveral times ſo ſerved but they could do no good upon me; yet notwithſtanding that by my frequent practice I had gain'd a great deal of skill and crafty knowledge in the Dice, I loſt, ſpent, and conſumed all my moneys, and therefore I ſhall adviſe all to deteſt this abominable kind of life; if the moſt certain loſs of your money will do it: I do undertake to demonſtrate that any one with conſtant play upon the ſquare ſhall be looſer at the years end. I have heard it very confi-

dently

dently aver'd by an eye witneſs that three Gentlemen ſate down at twelve penny Inn and Inn; each of them drew three pound a piece in two houres time, the box had four pounds of the money.

And that I may further perſwade all men from gameing, conſider how few there are if any who have gotten an Eſtate by play, but how many thouſand antient and worthy families have been ruined and deſtroyed thereby. It is confeſt there is no conſtant gameſter but at one time or other hath a conſiderable run of winning; but ſuch is the infatuation of play, that I could never hear of any that could give over when they were well. I have known thoſe have gotten many hundreds of pounds, and have reſted a while with an intention never to play more; but by over perſwaſion, having broke bulk, as they term it, were in again for all and loſt it.

Beſides if a man hath a good parcel of money 'tis extreme folly to play whether himſelf or another ſhall be poſſeſſor thereof; if his ſtock be ſmall it is downright madneſs to hazard that the loſs whereof ſhall reduce a man to beggery. Moreover if you were but ſenſible of the anguiſh that is upon that mans ſpirit the next morning, having ſlept upon the loſs of his money now irrecoverable, it would deter any one from ever medling with the curſed cauſe of ſo much vexation and trouble; what I now ſay is the product of wofull experience.

——— *Experto credo Roberto.*

To conclude, having loſt all my money, I began to grow miſerably poor, to prevent the further increaſe of my wants I ſought out my old Maſter whom I found upon the *Royal Exchange*, upon our going off for

for joy to ſee me, carryed me to a Tavern where I acquainted him with all my Land travels ſince my leaving him, and aſſuring him I was weary of living longer aſhore, he adviſed me to go with him, and he would make me his mate, I gladly conſented and in that quality I ſail'd with him for *Guinney*.

Our Captain had thus far proceeded in recounting the memorable paſſages of his life, as we were making ready to caſt Anchor, we being at that time not above a league from *Naples* overjoy'd at the ſucceſsfulneſs of this our petty Voyage, we made our ſelves all ready to go aſhore landing, our greateſt care was to get convenient Lodgings, with ſome difficulty we obtain'd them, and having ſettled our ſelves in them, immediately got our Bills of Exchange accepted, till they came due we fitted our ſelves with all things both neceſſar y and pleaſurable, yet for ſome important Reaſons for a while we laid an imbargo on our accuſtomed profeſt Extravagancies, keeping a ſtrict rein on our head-ſtrong wills and deſires, but having received our Money we no longer dallied with our delights, but gave them leave to court us in what pleaſant ſhapes they judged moſt convenient for our ſatisfaction.

Every day produced its new divertiſement, every hour each of us ſtudied how we m ght appear Rivals to the moſt Epicruean critical pallated Poleanate of the Univerſe, for ſince we were ſailing in the Ocean of *Senſeleſs Security* under a ſtiff gale of *Plenty*, we ſhaped our courſe for the *Port of Senſuality*. The time being expired we had our Money paid us to a Doit, with as much reſpect as if we had been the greateſt Merchants in *Europe*, deſiring our further acquain-

tance and correſpondence, which we promiſed not ſo much to traffick with them as to play ſome tricks upon them.

As our Lodgings were large and ſumptuous ſparing no coſt for their furniture, ſo were our habits very rich (*modo Neopolitano*) wearing about us as many precious ſtones dayly as would have been a good return for a young Merchant after a three years ſweating expectation: the glorioufneſs of our outward appearances made us no leſs a wonder to the *Neopolitan* Inhabitantts than we were to our ſelves, for we now began to admire one another having totally forgotten what once we were. Mr. *Gooſe-quill* the Scrivener ſtrutted the *Streets* ſtrangely whoſe garb and gait flouriſht like the *Capital T* of *This Indenture*, the ſtate of his preſent *Condition* made him receive many an *Obligation*, which he always generouſly *cancel'd* and continually *obliged* others on *valuable conſiderations*. The Drugſter notwithſtanding all his ſtriving, to ſeem otherwiſe, yet ſtill ſhowed himſelf to be a Chip of the old Block, a raſp of Log-wood, and ſented ſtrongly of his old occupation. His habit prompted him to perſonate the *Spaniard*; which he did ſo ſcurvily that never did *thing* appear more prepoſterous, had you ſeen him walk you would have ſworn all his Members were in an uproar or about to revolt from their Principal; for his Whiskers *tilted* his eyes, and they again being inraged to be confined within ſuch narrow limits by their ſtaring ſeemed to ſtrive to come out that they might check the inſolency of that audacious beard; and as for his arms and legs there was not the leaſt correſpondency; for his hands were in a continual motion being every minute imploy'd in cocking

cocking his Beaver upon one ſide, but his legs moved ſo ſlowly and ſtately, that they ſeemed to be offended at their ſlaviſh Office, ſhowing their loathneſs by their ſlowneſs to be Porters to a burden of ſo little worth. *Doll* as ſhe had been converſant amongſt the Gentry, ſo in her deportment ſhe behaved her ſelf as well as any of the beſt education; but for *Jenny* I could hardly forbear laughing, to ſee how the proud *Minks* would jut it as ſhe went, her Milking-Pail, and dragled tail, were clean out of her remembrance, ſo was her being a *Motly-Waſt-coteer*, there being not the leaſt track of her former condition diſcoverable, ſhe reſolved to make others eſteem of her by the value ſhe did put on her ſelf, not rating her condition as ſhe was the quondam off ſpring of Curds and Cream, but prizing it as one of Fortunes darlings, whom neither Cloaths nor Money could make more ſplendid, and as for an haughty ſpirit now unmatchable; I took upon me one day (as well I thought I might) to check her for giving ſix hundred Crowns for a Locket, ſhe ſmartly took me up, what ſaid ſhe though I was born in the Ebb of Fortune, will you now intrench and wound the liberty my better ſtars have conferred upon me? To be plain I will not have my deſires and pleaſures circumſcribed and taught me ſince I have enough and will enjoy it. Sir if you once begin to be narrow minded, you will be a Thief both to the eſteem and enjoyment you may have in the world, I will not be limited to pleaſe your fancy as for my delights I will purſue them in what ſhapes I fancy both at home and abroad, I will ſpare no coſt that may engage wide mouth'd report to proclaim the boundleſsneſs of my pleaſures and gallantry; all

the Wits of the City I will ingage with Sack and Money to write Panegyricks on my Gaudy and Witty ſuperfluities, not a *Cavaleero* in *Naples*, but ſhall vail his bonnet at my Balcony, and when I pleaſe the ſplendor of my habit ſhall fix my Gazers as Statues in the place they ſtand. I thought ſhe was mad till ſhe ſmilingly took me by the hand, ſaying you ſee *Lazeroon* I have a Soul as if Nobility had waited on my Cradle, however my will ſhall alwayes be in ſubordition to yours.

As for the Captain he was a Man well read, and having ſeen the world, the novelty of a place never alter'd him, he had a good natural genius, and very facetious in diſcourſe which appears ſufficiently by the witty narrative of his Life, the relation whereof, did infinitely pleaſe us, but moſt eſpecially my *Jenny*, who would often repeat to me ſome paſſages, but one day after dinner being altogether ſhe took occaſion to ſpeak of the Captains gaming and other Extravagancies, and having drawn ſeveral good Obſervations from them, ſhe deſired the Company to give her audience, and ſhe would give an account of a notable Extravagant, a young Man of her acquaintance, but as an introduction to her ſtory, ſhe begg'd leave to ſpeak ſomething of his Father firſt, and thus ſhe began.

CHAP.

19
20
21
22
23
24

CHAP. XIX

A Brewers-Clerk cheating his Maſter. is taken in the manner: Afterwards, he having buried his Maſter, by a politick Project is married to his Miſtreſs; he buries her, and is married to a Countrey-maid; who underſtanding her Husbands Riches, puts him to great expences in new furniſhing the Houſe, and extravagantly fitting her againſt, and in her lying in.

I Remember (ſaid Mrs. *Jane*) when I lived in *London*, there was a jolly old Blade, who was then the Aldermans Deputy of the Ward, and who was reported to be worth the better part of 10000 *lib.* that had in his youth been a notable Gamester, and many tricks he had uſed before his *Mercury* was fix'd, and became ſettled in the World. He had Travelled and Rambled many years by Sea and Land, and had tried and taſted all Fortunes and Conditions; and Fortune had alwayes been ſo much his friend, as to bring him off without a ſcratch'd face, no great, no ſenſible diſaſter; at length, being ſomwhat weary of the Ramble, he reſolved to take up and follow ſome imployment. He was fitted for any imployment, and yet not rightly fitted for none. But being of a good Capacity, he was entertained by a Brewer to be his deſperate Clerk, that is to ſay, to gather up the deſperate Debts. This was an Imployment very fit for him, for it gave him large convenience to Ramble; for the Brewer, who had been a great dealer, had Money oweing him by ſeveral people, ſome whereof lived at one end of the Town, and ſome at the other; ſo that all parts of that great City, eſpecially

the out-parts, his buſineſs lay in. He diſchaged this imployment indifferently well, for his Maſters profit, and very well for his own; for he had power if he could not get all, to compound with any of the debtors for a part. And although his allowance, being three ſhillings in the pound, was conſiderable, yet he much augmented it by the tricks he had; for although he received a Debt of five pound or more, he would tell his Maſter, that he could get but half; and ſometimes, although he received all, yet he would keep all to himſelf; and by this means he raiſed to himſelf a pretty fortune; and theſe tricks were uſual with him, eſpecially if the people with whom he made this profitable Bargain lived remote, or at any conſiderable diſtance from his Maſters habitation. Among others that he thus compounded with, there was an honeſt old Blade who lived near the Tower, and had run 10 *lib.* in his Maſter the Brewers debt; and through ſom misfortunes that had befallen him, he left that end of the Town, and went to dwell as far as St. *James's* near *Weſtminſter*; ſome while he had dwelt there without being known or inquired after; and now our Clerk being imployed to look after him, among others, was upon the hunt to find him: upon a ſtrict and diligent inquiry, he heard that he dwelt at St. *James's*. Wherefore the next time his occaſions call'd him that way, he there inquired for him; after much inquiring, he heard that the party had lived there, but was removed to *Clarkenwel*; he therefore went thither, and there, with as much trouble as before, he again heard that he had dwelt there, but he had ſome time ſince removed from thence to *Lyme-houſe*; he made the ſame inquiry, and ſtill heard of another

removal to *Lambeth*; and I think from thence to two or three places; but in fine, he found him, but it was in *Redriff*.

Having found out his Game, he ſtrongely charged him with the Debt aforeſaid, and was reſolved that as he had taken ſo much pains, that the poor man ſhould pay for it; poor man you muſt judge him to be, for it was impoſſible he ſhould be rich, that had in ſeven years made ſo many removes. The money being demanded, poverty was pleaded; but he was deaf on that ear, and was reſolved not to loſe his labour. In concluſion, the man being honeſt, was content to pay, and that all too, provided he might have time, to do it; to this our Clerk was pretty willing, and an agreement was made up, to pay the money by half a Crown a week. The man, although he ſometimes miſſed, yet when the Clerk came and received not the money, he was to ſpend 4*d.* and when he did pay, the Clerk agreed to ſpend 2 *d.* ſo that the Clerk ſeldom or never miſſed to come and viſit his Debter once every week; and the poor man ſeeing that if he did not pay him two ſhillings ſix pence, it was to his dammage 4 *d.* ſeldom miſs'd him; and thus in time, the Debt was paid, and the Clerk, in his Maſters behalf, gave a diſcharge.

But all this while his Maſter the Brewer knew nothing of this matter, neither did his man intend he ſhould; for as he had taken extraordinary pains in finding him out, ſo he was reſolved to have extraordinary gains, and indeed all for himſelf; and thought and judged that as he had oftentimes kept all for himſelf, ſo he might well do ſo now; for he believed although his Maſter ſhould go to ſome Cunning-man,

or the Devil himſelf, to find this man who had ſo often removed his habitation, yet he muſt looſe his labour; and it being uſual with him when People were not to be found, to write in the *Margin* of the Book where their Debts were entred, *Non eſt inventus*; and when they were dead, and there was no poſſibility of getting any thing of them, to write *Mortuus eſt*, ſo that now he concluded that this fellow was ſo far from being found, that he might write *Mortuus eſt*, and ſo he did in the Book aforeſaid. His Maſter had oftentimes looked over the Book, and ſeeing thoſe fatal words in the *Margin*, had paſſed that Debt over, as he had done ſeveral others with the ſame mark. But as the Proverb ſaith, that the *Pitcher goes not ſo often to the water, but that it comes home broken at laſt*; ſo, although this our deſperate Clerk had played many of theſe pranks, and that without diſcovery, yet now his time was come, and this buſineſs ſhewed him in his colours.

This poor man, who I told you, lately lived at *Rederiff*, had now made another remove, and from thence was come again to St. *Katharines* (which was near the Brewers habitation) and he having been ſo honeſt as to pay the old Debt, was reſolved to try if his Credit would ſerve for a new: wherefore having taken a new Houſe, fitting for the Ale-draping-Trade, he went one Morning to the Brew houſe; and having no acquaintance there with any body but our deſperate Clerk; he inquired for him, but although he was there early, he was never the nere, for the Clerk was gone out; and the old fellow fauntring about the yard, at length the Brewer himſelf came out, and ſeeing one waiting there, and as he ſuppoſed a-

bout

bout buſineſs too, he asked him if he would ſpeak with any body; the Fellow replyed yes, with his Clerk; which of them, ſaid the Brewer? Mr. *R.* ſaid the Fellow; the Brewer telling him that he was not within, and asking him if he could not do his buſineſs; yes, if you pleaſe Sir, replied the Fellow: Well then, what is it, ſaid the Brewer: May it pleaſe you, Sir, I am an old Cuſtomer, ſaith the Fellow, and have long time dealt with you: and although I have been abſent a great while, yet I have been honeſt, and will be ſo ſtill; and being come to live near you, I deſire you to let me have ſome more drink: Well Friend, what is your name, ſaid the Brewer: *J. B.* ſaid the Fellow. How long ſince did you deal with me, ſaid the Brewer: Ten years, replyed the Fellow: Whereupon the Brewer calling for his Book, looked over, and at length found it, but found it marked with a *Mortuus eſt:* how now, ſaid he then, is your name *J. B.* and are you alive. Yes, Sir, ſaid the Fellow, your Clark knows me; for I have paid him truly and honeſtly, and not ſince he received the laſt.

The Brewer hearing him ſay ſo, and now diſcovering the whole ſtory, and his Clerks knavery, told the man that he would ſend him in ſome Drink, but withal ordered him to come the next morning about 9 a Clock. But before that time, about 8, he took his Clerk to task, and pretending to look over his Book in general, made ſeveral ſtops and asked queſtions, but more particularly when he came to this Debt; and he asking if he never received any money of him; No, Sir, ſaid the Clerk, I could never find him; and at length I did hear of him, but *Mortuus*

eſt,

eſt, Sir, He's dead long ſince. Are you ſure of it? replyed the Brewer: Yes, Sir, ſaid the Clerk, I am certainly ſure of it; what I have writ there is infallible: But I doubt it will not prove ſo, ſaid the Maſter; and thereupon, ſeeing the Cuſtomer come in, he ſaid, look, ſure this is he, or his Ghoſt. Our Clerk too well knowing the matter, and that it was ſo apparent, knew not what to ſay or do, but knowing that he was in a fault, and caught too, and being guilty of many more ſuch tricks, and doubting they would all come out, cryed *Peccavi*, and deſired Pardon: but his Maſter believing him to be more Knave than he yet knew, told him his thoughts, and (withal) that he would lay him Jayl. The Clerk hearing that lamentable word, told his Maſter he would prevent him by drowning himſelf; and thereupon the houſe being by the water-ſide, he ran thither, in order to his reſolution, The Brewer hearing the Clerks reſolution of drowning himſelf, and doubting that he might be ſo deſperate as to do ſo, ſent after him to ſtop and hinder him; for he conſidered that he ſhould not only be ſomewhat guilty of his death, but alſo looſe by it, for he had all his Books and Tallies about him; and if he ſhould miſcarry, he was not able to prove many debts that were owing to him, wherefore he not only ſaved his life, but told him, he forgave him that miſdemeanor, and would not ask him any ſatisfaction, whereupon he reſted contented: But this miſcarriage of his was ſuch a blot in his Scutchion, that he was called *Mortuus eſt*, to his dying day.

But thus as he had over-reached, out-witted, or, I may truly ſay, Cheated his Maſter the Brewer, ſo he did, after him deal with his Miſtreſs, but after a different

different manner: for his Maſter ſoon after dying, and leaving a plentiful Eſtate, and only a Widow to enjoy it; ſhe knowing her Clerks abilities were ſufficient, and now not doubting his honeſty, gave him a very large allowance, and made him chief Clerk, and Overſeer of all, he being in this high employment, was ſomewhat covetous, but more ambitious, and theſe two paſſions raiſed another, which he termed Love; and who ſhould he be in Love with but his Miſtreſs: and as he was her Overſeer, ſo he intended to be her Husband. Before he had the confidence to court her, he pretended to the Servants and others, that he did ſo, and this was out of Pollicie to hinder the Courtſhips of all others, So that by that time his Miſtreſs underſtood and knew his pretenſions, all others did talk of the time of his Marriage: One, in his fancie, appointing at ſuch a time, and another at ſuch a time: ſo that he letting his Miſtreſs know his paſſion, as he termed it, ſhe heard that all her Servants, nay, and ſome of her Friends talked ſo freely of it, as if they ſeemed to allow of it.

She was much troubled at the boldneſs of her Servant, and forbid his proſecution of his Suit, telling him that he ſhall loſe his labour; but he, now he was in, was reſolved to go through with his bold undertaking, perſevered in it, and uſed all the Courtſhips that were uſual on that account. It was his place to receive and pay all Moneys, ſo that all the Servants both men and women, came to him for their wages; and he giving them a caſt in his Office, and uſing them courteouſly, they dealt with and for him accordingly; beſides this, he had beſtowed ſome moneys

moneys and preſents on the Chamber-maid, who had promiſed to be at his direction, and to ſtand his friend in every thing; and indeed ſhe uſed all her little Rhetorick in his behalf.

He being ſtill refuſed by his Miſtreſs, was reſolved to hazzard all at once, and therefore he cauſed the Chamber-maid to tell it as a ſecret that two dayes after that, he was to be married to her Miſtreſs: All the Servants told it to one another whiſperingly, and together they provided a noiſe of Muſick to welcome him up on the next Morning: He having thus laid his Plot, and the time being come, about five of the Clock of the next morning after his pretended Wedding-day, by the Chamber-maids connivance he got into his Miſtreſſes Bed-Chamber; and he had not ſtaid there long, but the Muſick coming under the Chamber window, tuned their inſtruments, and ſtruck up a luſty meaſure: his Miſtreſs being awaked at the noiſe, cried out, and asked, what is the matter? He being in his Night-Cap, and without a Doublet in his ſhirt, drawing the Curtains, told her, that the matter ſhe ſhould preſently hear: She ſeeing him in the chamber, and in that poſture, wondring at the occaſion, called out for the Maid; who although ſhe was near enough, yet would not hear her; ſhe believing that ſhe was betrai'd, thought to cry out, and began to do ſo, but could not be heard for the noiſe of the Muſick. By this time the Muſicians had finiſhed their firſt tune, and then, as uſual, they cryed out, *Good Morrow, Mr. Bride-groom; Good Morrow Mrs. Bride, Heavens give you joy.* What Bride, and Bridegroom, do they mean, ſaid the Woman. Why, ſaid he, they mean us two; for it having been ſtrongly reported

that

that we were married yeſterday, the Muſick are come this Morning to play us up, and truly, continued he, I was juſt now informed of it, and hoping it is by your appointment; and that at length you intend it ſhall be ſo, I am come to try your diſpoſition: and thereupon he forced a Kiſs from her; and ſaid, Madam, will you be pleaſed to own this Wedding? No, ſaid ſhe, nor you neither: Then I will, ſaid he; and thereupon the Muſick having now plaid another Leſſon, he in that poſture threw them out of the window four half-Crown-pieces; and ſtanding in that poſture for ſome time, ſhewed himſelf, and ſpake to the Servants and others that were there aſſembled. And now the Muſick having plaid their laſt Leſſon, ſaluting him with a *Thank you Mr. Bridgroom*, they departed. He now coming to the bed-ſide, ſat down by his Miſtreſs, and told her, All her people had ſhewed themſelves joyful in his ſuppoſed happineſs, and that therefore he hoped ſhe would really make him ſo, by doing that in earneſt, that all the World thought was ſo; and, ſaid he, do you ſay what you will, it will be thought that it is ſo, and that I have lain all this Night in your Chamber.

She would not anſwer him one word, ſo penſive ſhe was, in conſidering what had hapen'd; but at length ſhe told him, that if yet he would obey her in any thing, ſhe deſired him to call her Maid; he who knew that the Maid would not prejudice him, ſoon called her; and ſhe was no ſooner come into her Miſtreſſes ſight, but ſhe cryed out, Oh Lord, Miſtreſs, how joyful I am; at what, replyed the Miſtreſs; that you and Mr. *R.* are marryed; why, who tells you ſo, ſaid the Miſtreſs? All the World, ſaid the Maid, not only our family but all the ſtreet know it, and the

Muſick

Muſick too thankt you for your liberal rewarding them. The Miſtreſs hearing that the Maid was of this mind, did believe that ſhe ſaid true, and that all the Town would ere long be of her opinion; wherefore chiding her Maid for leaving the door open, and telling her, that although all the world did, or might believe that ſhe was married, yet ſhe could ſay, and ſwear the contrary, for that ſhe had been her Bed-fellow that night; and therefore, ſaid ſhe, I expect that you will go and undeceive them, and tell them ſo. The Maid replyed, that although ſhe knew what ſhe ſaid was true, yet ſhe wiſhed it were otherwiſe; and added, that Mr. *R.* was more fit to be her Bed-fellow than ſhe was. Well, well, Goſſip, replied the Miſtreſs, then you muſt appoint me what to do. No, anſwered the Maid, but I only tell you my opinion. No more, ſaid the Miſtreſs, and thereupon was a great ſilence between them. But Mr. *R.* being reſolved to try her a little further, made a ſign to the Maid to leave the Chamber; ſhe obeyd him, and he then again fell to wooing it with his Miſtreſs; who although ſhe gave him no anſwer for a long time, yet ſhe thought the more and paid it with thinking, and conſidering the caſe truly as it ſtood in every reſpect, he over-ruled and overcame her; whether he gave her then an earneſt penny (as he was like enough to do) or no, I know not; but he keeping her company for ſome hours, and by her conſent getting a Coach, he clapt her into it; and going to the next Church, ſent for a Parſon, and there that was done in earneſt, that had been ſo well preſented in jeſt; and the next night he did lie with her; and that he might be ſure to have Witneſſes of his being in bed with her,

ſeveral

ſeveral of their acquaintance were admitted into the Chamber.

By this device (ſaid Mrs. *Mary*) did this Clerk get him a Wife, and an Eſtate to boot, and that a very conſiderable one, which he looked after warily and carefully; and as an old Whore-maſter is the fitteſt perſon to make a Juſtice of the Peace, to puniſh that in others which he by experience knows more than ordinary, or for envy that he cannot proſecute his old courſes. So this Clerk having been a ſinner, and having been guilty of cheating his Maſter, was now too cunning to ſuffer any of his Under-Officers to ſerve him in the ſame manner. And he ſo well followed this courſe, that he became Rich; and when his wife died, which was ſome years after, he had ſcraped ſuch an Eſtate together, that he was looked upon to be one of the moſt conſiderable perſons in the Pariſh.

His Wife being dead, and he being now an old Fox, was reſolved to be wary in his ſecond choice, and to have both pleaſure and profit: and not having any Children by his old Wife, intended to have one that might be in poſſibility of bringing thoſe that might Heir his eſtate.

He therefore putting himſelf into as youthful a habit as he could, woed ſeveral Maids of good birth and Quality; and in the end, the *London* Laſſes not fitting his humour, as being too wantonly and tenderly bred, and therefore proud and chargeable, he went into the Countrey, where he found one, who not being above four and twenty years of age, well bred, and one who had 400 *lib.* to her portion, and was ſufficiently

ficiently handſom; to this Maiden thus qualified, he being now ſixty years of Age was marryed: ſhe at firſt proved to be what he expected, an obedient and loving wife; but in ſhort time, underſtanding her Husbands Quality, that he was the chiefeſt man in the Pariſh, and thereby underſtanding her own, and being viſited by, and viſiting of her Neighbours, and ſeeing their manners and cuſtomes, their entertainments, habits, houſhold-ſtuff and other Ornaments for themſelves and houſes, and believing that they were below her in Quality, it was not long ere ſhe by their example deſired, nay demanded the like; ſhe would frequently tell her Husband, that ſhe had been at ſuch a Neighbours, and there ſaw ſuch a ſuch a ſuit of Curtains and Vallence which were better and more in faſhion than hers; and when by her perſwaſions or flattery ſhe had obtained the like, then ſhe complained that the Bed-ſtead was an old faſhion'd one, and that muſt be changed: next, that ſhe muſt have new Chairs and Stools ſuitable to the Curtains; and then ſhe reſted not there, until ſhe had gotten a new ſuit of hangings ſuitable to the Curtains and Stools; and now ſhe ſtopp'd in her expences that way, but exceeded in another; for this new Furniture being had, all her Neighbours, Friends, and Acquaintance muſt be invited, one after another, to her houſe to ſee what an alteration ſhe had made, and to have their opinions how they liked them. And theſe Friends muſt be treated with Wine and Junckets, and their Opinions being asked, one ſaid, that indeed all was well, but that the Looking-glaſs ſhe had was unſuitable, and an old pittiful thing, and therefore a new one muſt be had; another found fault with the braſs Andirons in the Chimney,

ney, and that all that furniture muſt be changed; and a third ſaid, there wanted a handſom Cabinet or Cheſt of Drawers: and now ſhe had the opinion of her Neighbours, ſhe never let her Husband reſt, night or day, till all theſe things were done as ſhe deſired. The Chamber being thus ſet in order, the Kitchen was the next thing to be conſidered of, and there the Pewter firſt appeared, and that being old faſhioned, and being purchaſed at ſeveral times, was all differently marked; wherefore all that was changed for other that was of a newer faſhion; and that ſhe might be *a-la mode*, there muſt be no Letter-Marks on it, but on every piece there muſt be the Coat of Arms of her Husband, and hers empaled, engraven on them; and it may be, he being unacquainted with any Arms of his own or hers either, muſt be at the charge to ſearch the Heralds Office for them; and they being found out, (for money rarely miſſes to make any man ſo much a Gentleman as to have a Coat) they muſt alſo be fairly painted, to hang up in the Hall; and the affairs in the Kitchen not being yet throughly reformed, the good old Andirons are changed into a new faſhion'd Range or Grate; and now all the Pewter being new, the ſhelves and dreſſers muſt be new made and new painted, as all the Kitchin was likewiſe. Thus did this Woman employ her ſelf in the day time, and at night, he firſt giving her a grant that ſhe ſhould have the thing ſhe deſired, ſhe requited him in the beſt manner ſhe could: and he employed himſelf ſo well, that ſhe was with Child; and in ſhort time ſhe being confirmed in the opinion that ſhe was ſo, her Stomach was very ſqueamiſh, and ſhe muſt have Caudles and Cordials of all ſorts; for the making and ordering

of which, ſhe had the advice of an hundred Midwives, Nurſes, and Goſſips; and then ſhe longed for all things ſhe ſaw or heard of, eſpecially ſuch things as were ſcarce and coſtly, as Cherries and Strawberries in *March* and *April*, when ſhe was forced to give 12*d* or 18*d* a piece for them; but when *May* came, and that they were any thing cheaper, ſhe cared not for them. And next, all her buſineſs was in making proviſion againſt the Bantling ſhould come to Town; there muſt be new Blankets, Beds, Rowlers, Pilches, Clouts, Shirts, Head-bands, Biggins, and a world of ſuch kind of little Utenſils provided; and the Cradle and Groaning-Chair muſt alſo be bought and made ready, and the Mantles which had ſerved his former old Wife were too much out of faſhion to be uſed now, (it is well if the beſt of them will ſerve for an ordinary Blanket) and a new one muſt be bought, and not one would ſerve the turn, but ſeveral there muſt be; one for the Chamber, another for to carry the Child abroad in, in Summer; another warmer, for the Winter; and above all theſe, there muſt be one coſtly one, wherein the Child muſt be dreſſed to be Chriſtned in; (for it is too mechanical and baſe to uſe that of the Midwives) and it may be another muſt be had to be ſpread upon the Bed. All theſe things were provided, and the Clouts and other linnen being made, ſeveral Waſhers and Starchers were employed to waſh, ſtarch, rub, ſlick, pinch, and make up this parcel, which muſt be laid up in Sweet-Powder in her new Cheſt of Drawers. Theſe things being thus provided ſhe had not yet done, but ſtill wanted more, but eſpecially two or three Baskets, one whereof being of fine wicker or rods, or elſe of Wire-work and beads;

beads; or elſe wire-work and Cloves, or elſe ſomewhat that is more fantaſtical, and by conſequence more coſtly, and one of theſe ſhe had, and with it at leaſt 20 dozen yards of ſeveral Colours of penny-Ribbons to be tied in curious knots about the basket. All theſe things the good old man gave Money to his Wife to provide; and theſe pretty things together amounted to a great ſum. But all of them was nothing conſiderable to her next demand, and that was a Cup-boards-head of Plate: ſome there was in the houſe, *viz.* a beer-bowl, a Beaker, a Salt, and a dozen of Apoſtle Spoons; but theſe muſt be changed, and others provided; *viz.* one large Tanckard, two ſmaller of an equal ſize, one Plate, one Sugar-diſh, two or three Porringers, two Caudle-Cups, two dozen of *S*poons, a couple of Candleſticks, one pair of Snuffers; and ſuch a large Inventory of this kind of Ware ſhe did reckon up, that it troubled her Husband, and almoſt broke his heart to think how to ſatisfie the ambitious humour of his Wife; but knowing that there was no quietneſs without, he alſo bought and provided all theſe ſeveral parcels, and upon every piece of Plate their Coat of Arms were engraven: If I ſhould reckon up all the other things, Sugar, Spice, Wine and Sweet-meats to be uſed at the crying out; to which was added *Weſtphalia* Hams, Neats-Tongues, Geeſe, and ſuch kind of Victuals as would toll down the Liquor and make the womens tongues run glib; but above all a groaning Cheeſe, and then other ſorts of Proviſions, as Quilts for the Bed, *S*heets, Pillow-beers, Cloaks for her ſelf to ſit up in, Pinners, Cloves, and a world of ſuch kind of trinckets; I ſhould not pleaſe you, but tire my ſelf, but the time of her cry-

ing out being near at hand, She tired the Midwife, Nurſe, and Servants, and her Husband too, with her continual falſe Alarms. But at length, her full time being come, and the Fruit being ripe, it muſt fall; and after all this diligence in watching and attendance and great Coſt and Charges, in the Proviſion aforeſaid, She was delivered of one of the worſer ſort, a pitiful piſs-kitching puling Girl: Although their expectations were all fruſtrated, as expecting a Son and Heir, yet it could not be, they muſt be content; and the woman was well enough ſatisfied, as being told that when a Boy is born, the Father is better pleaſed; and when a Girl, then the Mother; and She believing this Maxime to be true, hoped that it was a good Omen that ſhe ſhould for the future, prevail over, and command her Husband.

The Child being born, and likely enough to live, the women fell to, and in an hours time eat up, and drank off all this proviſion, and then their tongues ran like ſo many Mill-clacks; every one handling, dandling, kiſſing and ſpending their Verdict about this Bantling. One ſaid, it was as like the Father as if it had been ſpit out of his mouth; another, that it had his very Noſe; a third, that it was mouth'd like the Mother; and a fourth, that it had its Fathers eyes; and thus they all ſpent their Verdict: and although they all ſpake differently of the Childs yet all muſt and did conclude that it was very like the Father. He poor man was called up amongſt them, and according to cuſtom being to kiſs all the women, was much puzled to do it in an orderly manner; for ſhe that was fineſt, thought her ſelf to be beſt, and therefore firſt to be ſaluted; ſhe that was eld-

eſt

eſt expected the ſame: and accordingly ſeveral of them put themſelves forwards, ſo that he did not know when he had done; but at length they all having joyed him of his young Daughter, they ſat down, and then kiſſed he his little one, but durſt not do ſo to his wife without the Nurſes leave, leſt ſhe ſhould exact the uſual fee of a pair of Gloves; wherefore he ſeeing that there was Charge enough already, was reſolved to avoid all that he could.

His wife now having a Child muſt have all fitting appendixes and attendants to it; and ſhe being reſolved not to give her ſelf the trouble of nurſing it her ſelf, and being withal too fond of her Baby to have it out of her ſight, therefore Nurſes were ſought out, viz. a dry-Nurſe, and a wet-Nurſe; one to ſuckle the Child, and another to waſh the Clouts, and rock, and attend it; beſides a third, to attend the woman. But although ſhe did not reſolve to ſuckle the Child her ſelf, yet ſhe had a conſiderable troulbe to dry up her Milk; for ſhe was forced to have a woman to draw her Breaſts firſt, and then to uſe Towe, Sage-Poſſets, and other things, to dry it up. This was her trouble; but her Husbands trouble and Charges were intollerable. There was every day ſomething or another wanting; and being reſolved to manage his affairs himſelf, and receive and pay all, had enough to; and it almoſt broke his heart to ſee how trivially and vainly his money was drawn from him upon his wifes account. He now wiſhed his old Wife alive, or that he had not tried the troubleſome effects of being married to a young woman; but this his repentance came too late, and ſeeing he could not help it, he was reſolved to bear all patiently.

The Child and Wife being both now in a fit conditi-

on, the Child was to be Chriſtned; the trouble of getting or procuring God-Fathers and God-Mothers was little trouble to him, for he had too great an acquaintance to be unprovided of choice of them. But the charge of that Ceremony was very chargeable. There were Glovs for the Midwife, Deputy-Midwife, Nurſes, Servitors, and all his Servants; and ſuch coſtly Services for the women, as coſt him many a ſigh to conſider of it. And this being over, his houſe was every day filled with Goſſipings, who although, as is uſual, they brought the meat, yet he found the ſawce, which was alwayes as chargable as the reſt. And he was uſed to ſay on theſe occaſions, that although the Gueſts brought their own Victuals, yet he that laid the Cloth paid the greateſt ſhare. There was ſuch revelling and noiſe, ſuch laughing and merry-making, that his head was ſo diſordered, that he neglected and could not keep his accounts in their uſual method.

But as all times run on and will have their period, ſo this time had an end, but his Charge had none; for his wife being able to ſit up and appear to her Goſſips, in that poſture She was to be provided with a new morning-Gown, and Sattin Cloke to ſit up in; and no ſooner was that made, but order was given for a new Tabbee-Gown, and Sattin-Petticoat for her to go abroad in, it being, as they told him, a beggerly buſineſs to permit his wife to wear old Clothes at her firſt going abroad; and the Exchange was examined for all the neweſt faſhion'd appurtenances, that in every thing ſhe might appear like his wife; and all this they told him, muſt neceſſarily be done for his Credit. Although he knew it was more for his profit and Credit too to be furniſhed with large bags full of ready money to pay people on his neceſſary occaſi-

occaſions, yet he was forced to empty ſome of them in theſe extravagant vanities. A great Feaſt being made on that day moneth that his wife was brought to bed, and ſhe being then Churched, and having walked abroad to ſhew her ſelf in her new Clothes, at night he thought he ſhould quietly have gone to bed to her, but he was forbidden that by the Nurſe, becauſe forſooth, all the groaning-Cheeſe was not eaten up, but he being willing to put an end to all theſe fooleries together; and hoping this was the laſt of them, compounded with her, and ſo he had admittance. And thus was all this great troubleſom and chargeable buſineſs ended.

Thus (continued Mrs. *Jane*) was the charge and trouble of this buſineſs over, but the continued Charge and trouble that his Wife ſtill put him to on all occaſions did not ceaſe, but did ſo afflict and torment him, that he often wiſhed himſelf unmarried.

CHAP. XX.

In ſhort time after the old Mans Wife is with Child again, and brought to bed of a Son, to the great charge of the Father. The Old Mans ways of getting Moneys and his covetous humour of ſtealing Bricks: he is caught in the manner, and made to pay for it; alſo he is forced to wade through the water by his Covetouſneſs. The Extravagancies of the young Son, who being corrected by his School Maſter, in revenge breaks his Windows: His Mother locks him up, and he cuts her Chairs and Stools in pieces, his Father threatens to correct him, and he pretends to be drowned; he gets Money from his Father, rambles and ſpends it; and coming home, his Father again threatning him, he pretends to be hanged.

WHether our Old Blade was pleaſed with his Nights lodging with his Wife, I know not, but I am ſure he was diſpleaſed with the effects of that, or ſome ſuddainly after, for it was not long ere his Wife diſcovered her ſelf to be with child again; and then there was not only the ſecond part to the ſame tune, but alſo much more trouble; for ſhe breeding this great Belly worſe than the other, was more troubleſom; and concluding by this difference in her breeding, that now ſhe ſhould have a different birth, a Son to her Daughter, She told the old man that ſhe was confident of it; and ſo indeed it proved; for at the uſual time ſhe was brought a Bed of a Son but he was a chargeable one to the Old man in his birth, and a croſs to him all his life after.

Much

Much proviſion was made to entertain their young Heir; and although the woman was well enough provided before, yet now there were additions to every thing, and all the houſe was altered and turned topſie turvy; two Rooms beat into one, to make a Hall big enough to entertain the Gueſts the more commodiouſly; and a ſuit of Tapeſtry-Hangings, and Turky-work Chairs, and other Furniture to adorn it; and ſhould I run through all the ſeveral alterations and additions that were then made, I ſhould be as troubleſom to you, as this woman was to her Husbands Money-bags: wherefore I wil omit all things of that nature to your imaginations, and only tell you in general, that this woman was as profuſe in her expences as ſhe could imagine; ſo that her Husband, after this lying in, did give her an account of her expences, and made out clearly to her, that ſhe had coſt him in alterations in his houſe, and theſe two Lyings in, full as much as he had with her for Portion; and therefore he knowing the virtue of ready Money, was reſolved not to be over-rul'd by her any longer, and be led to theſe vain extravagancies. Although his Eſtate, and profit and gains of his Trade would well enough bear with theſe expences, yet he being naturally covetous, being now grown old, that Vice was encreaſed, and knowing that now he had two Children to provide for, he ſcrap'd up all he could, pretending to his wife it was for her and them; ſo that now his Purſe was cloſe ſhut againſt all her requeſts and entreaties; and not long after a fair opportunity of a good Cuſtomer happening, he ſold off all his Stock in Trade, Utenſils, and Houſe; and having an eſtate large enough for him to manage without Trading,

he

he left of all employment, and retired, taking a Houſe a few miles off from *London*; thither did he carry his Wife and Family: and now in this private way he deſigned to ſave; for now there was no occaſion of feaſting and entertaining Friends, as before. The wife was now cut off from deceiving the old man of his Money, becauſe he ſeldom kept any in his Houſe, leaving that ſtill, as it came to hand, at his Scriveners in *London*, and bringing home no more than would ſerve to keep houſe: and now all that ſhe could handſomly get was by cheating him in her Marketting; for She would pretend that parcel of meat which coſt her ten ſhillings, did coſt her twelve or thirteen, and ſo of the reſt. So that ſhe brought the old man to allow her fourty Shillings *per* week to keep the Houſe; and then ſhe pinched his Guts, and made him look out abroad for Victuals; at home She would make a neck of Mutton ſerve for three dreſſings, and would give him of the worſt: but he made his belly amends by viſiting of Friends, who treated him; he was one of the Maſters of the Company of whichhe was a freeman; he was one of the Maſters of the Pariſh, where he had long dwelt; he was one of the Maſters of one or two Hoſpitals; and as long-liv'd over-grown rich Citizens uſually are ſo was he in all theſe places, and many more; ſo that there was ſeldom a week in the year; and ſometimes never a day in the week; but he was invited to one of theſe Aſſemblies; where he did eat at the coſt of others, and not only eat, but carry away in his Hawking-bag; which he wore by his ſide on purpoſe, although he pretended it was to carry Papers and writings which he had occaſion to uſe; and this Hawking bag was ſeldom

ſeldom empty; for when he was at any of theſe feaſts, or at any other Treatment by a friend, he would ſtuff it full of ſuch Provant as beſt liked him; and now having the conveniency of carriage, he would alſo ſteal Knives; nay, rather then fail, Candles-ends, and put them into his Hawking bag; and I have known that ſometimes his Covetouſneſs hath carried him further, to ſteal quarries of glaſs out of the windows of the Houſe where he hath been, and thereby damage other folks windows to mend his own.

Theſe were the effects of his Covetouſneſs, but he was catch'd in one trick, and made to pay ſoundly for it, and thus it was: His houſe being a few miles from *London*, he uſually went and came every day, ſometimes on Horſeback, but uſually on foot; he had occaſion for a parcel of bricks to build a ſmall brick wall, to divide a yard; and ſeeing in his way between *London* and home that there was a Brick-ki'n, and withal that it was uſual with people to take one or two, he did ſo likewiſe; and ſtill when he went home on foot, he would take 2, 3, or 4, and clapping them under his Cloak, carry them home. At times he had thus carryed home as many as would neer build his wall; but the owner of the Brick-kiln being acquainted with his doings, and his covetous inclination, was reſolved to catch him, and make him pay for it; wherefore he watched him, and catcht him with four bricks under his arm: How now? my friend, ſaid the Brick-maker, What have you gotten under your Cloak? Nothing, nothing, replyed our Old Dotard: I muſt ſee, ſaid the other; and thereupon threw open his Cloak, and diſcovered the prize: what do you with theſe Bricks? ſaid the Owner: and thereupon being

being reſolved what to do, called his Servants, and went before a Juſtice of Peace with the Old man; who being thus caught, could not deny the fact; but the Owner charged him with many thouſand of Bricks, which, he ſaid, he had loſt; and ſo ordered the matter, that he made our Old man pay more than his Brick-wall might have been honeſtly built for, and thus did his Covetouſneſs bring him to ſhame and diſgrace; but he ſtill perſevered in it, though it were ſometimes to his dammage.

He being one evening going home, and paſſing by a River, ſaw two men a fiſhing; he not being in haſte, ſtepp'd to a ſandy-bank that was in the River, and ſtood there ſome time to ſee them and that ſo long, that the Tide being come in, he was incompaſſed with water, and did not perceive it; and there he was in great care and fear to come out; he muſt not adventure to wade; but ſeeing a labouring man come by, he cried out to him, for Heavens ſake to come and help him out, and he would reward him very largly, and withal pulled out his purſe of money, ſhewing him that he was furniſhed with that which would recompence him for his pains.

The poor man ſeeing that attractive Metal, and hoping that he might get as much for a ſmall job as he had gained all the day, he therefore without any more ado wades through the water to the place were our Old Fellow was; and being come thither, took him in his arms, and carried him through the water, and ſo ſet him down; he being now out of danger, cryed, the Lord bleſs you, honeſt man, I will reward you; and thereupon drawing his Purſe, fumbled in it, turning his money over and over, and finding three farthings

farthings, gave them to the poor man, telling him, if he could have found the fourth he ſhould have had it; he all this while ſtood with his Cap in hand, with a God bleſs your worſhip; but being deceived in his expectation, he was reſolved to be even with the old Dotard, and therefore clapping his Cap on his head, he caught hold on the old Fellow: and taking him in his Arms, ſtept into the water, and carried him to, and ſet him down in the place where he had took him up, and there left him; and being come again aſhore, ſaid to the old man, Sir, ſince you are ſo bountiful in your reward, I thought it fit to earn my money by carrying you twice as far as you intended; the Old man called out to him, deſiring him for all loves to carry him out, but he was deaf to all perſwaſions, and therefore left him; ſo that the Old man doubting that he ſhould be drowned, was enforced to wade through, as he ſaw the fellow had done; and ſo he went home dropping dry.

Thus was he ſometimes catch'd, but what he loſt, or what dammage ſoever he ſuſtained, he made others to pay for it, eſpecially his Debtors, for he ſtill cauſed them to feaſt him; and he was not content with what he could eat or drink, but he muſt carry away, not only in his Hawking-bag, but he had another Utenſil, a ſilver Sucking-bottle, and ſtill this was filled at other folks charges, either with Canary or ſtrong-Waters; and this the Old fellow drank off as he travelled, or elſe emptyed out when he came home, keeping it for a reſerve.

And as he pinched, and ſcraped together from others, ſo his wife did from; and that ſhe ſaved, ſhe expended or preferred upon her young Son; who was no ſooner come

come to be eight years of age, but he ſhewed forth the moſt vitious and debauched inclination of any youth in the place where he dwelt; and his Mother cockering him, and encouraging him in his follies, it was not hard to gueſs at his future deportment; ſo that all concluded that he would uſe the fork in diſperſing and ſcattering abroad, as well as his Father had uſed the rake in gathering and ſcraping together; and that he would ſpend that under the Divels belly, which his Father had gained over the Divels back; and to manage him in his early debaucheries, his Mother ſupplyed him with Moneys, which was like putting a Sword into a Mad-mans hand; for he employed that, to do as much miſchief: by that time he came to be ten years of age, his Siſter died; and now he being the only Child, was much humoured by his Mother.

The Father proſecuted his ways of getting Money by Uſury, and left the whole management of the Son to his wife; neither indeed would ſhe permit him to be under his tuition, or be inſtructed by him, leſt, as ſhe ſaid, he ſhould be infected with Covetouſneſs, and other his ill Qualities. He being Maſter of Moneys, was thereby Maſter of all the Boys that dwelt near him; and he ſpending Money on them ſtill, had them at his diſpoſe; and they not being ſupplied by their Parents with Moneys as he was, would ſometimes ſteal from them to keep him company; he raiſed a whole Company of theſe Boys, and became their Captain; & if he had a mind to do any miſchief to any other Boys, he could preſently execute it by one of theſe.

He would not go to School to that Maſter that once whipped him, neither would his Mother permit that her

her ſon, howdeſervedly ſoever, ſhould be corrected, but ſtrait took him away from School; and he rather went not at all to inſtructed, than would admit of any correction. He being for his untowardneſs laſhed by one of his School-maſters, went away, and would to be reveng'd of his Maſter, abuſe and affront him, and thoſe that took his part; the School-maſter hearing of it, cauſed a couple of the luſtieſt of his Scholars to catch him, and bring him into the School, where he cauſed him to be untruſſed and horſed, laſhed him ſoundly, giving him School-butter, and then ſent him away. This affront our young man ſtomached exceedingly, and was reſolved to revenge it; wherefore he aſſembled thoſe of his companions who were led to aſſiſt him in any miſchievous undertaking; and acquainting them with his purpoſe, they promiſed their ready aſſiſtance; and he not caring, ſo it were done, how it were done, took up a parcel of ſtones, and a Cudgel in his hand, and cauſing all the reſt of his Company to do ſo too, they advanced to the School-Maſters Houſe, where they all at once diſcharged a whole volley of ſtones againſt the windows, and after that another; by this time the School-Maſter himſelf was alarm'd, and looking out of the School window, had like to have had his Teeth beaten out with a ſtone; which however ſhook and looſened two or three: The Scholars ſeeing this affront put on their Maſter, all ran down to revenge it; and catching up what ſticks and ſtones they could firſt meet with, began a dangerous fight, which continued till the Conſtable came to part them; there were ſeveral on both ſides wounded, and the School-Maſters windows were much dammaged; wherefore he knowing who was

the

the Ring-leader of this Rout, had him ſecured, and carried before the Juſtice, where the School-Maſter made his complaint with reaſon enough; but our youngs mans Father was ſo intimate with the Juſtice, that the poor *S*chool-Maſter could have no Juſtice done him; but the young man being ſoundly checkt, was ſent home to his Mother. His Father doubting that theſe exorbitant courſes would be dangerous, was reſolved to correct his *S*on, but his Mother would not let him come under his diſciplination, but would undertake to correct him her ſelf: He who had never yet been contradicted in any thing that was his will, was very unwilling now to take any correction; and although that which his Mother intended was but ſmall, yet he would not endure it.

All ſhe did to him was to lock him up in a Chamber for two or three days, till ſhe could humble him; but he was too ſtiff now to ſtoop to her or any Body elſe; wherefore when he had been kept in one whole day, his Mother coming to viſit him, ſhe found him more ſtubborn than before; and he threatned, that if ſhe kept him in, he would be even with her: ſhe ventured him the ſecond day, and came to him again at night, but found no amendment, but tokens of a high ſtomach ſhe told him, ſhe muſt and would break him, he ſaid, ſhe could not, nor ſhould not; and if ſhe kept him within any longer, ſhe ſhould have cauſe to repent it. She was reſolved to try, but he was as good as his word; for getting a Knife, he had cut all her fine Chairs and Stools to pieces; ſhe ſeeing this, was paſſionately angry, and turned him out of the Room, gave him over to be corrected by his Father; who underſtanding the Miſchief he had done, was reſolved

folved to puniſh him ſeverely, and to that end made preparations. The Servants in the houſe adviſed him to ſubmit himſelf to his Father and Mother, and ask forgiveneſs, and that they would undertake all ſhould be well again; but he would not yield, but was reſolved to take another courſe; wherefore he provided himſelf with neceſſaries, and thus he did.

He went to a Pond, about a mile from his Fathers Houſe, and putting of his Clothes, went into the water, and ſtaid there ſome time, ſo that he was ſeen and obſerved by ſeveral Boys, who were there a waſhing: he out-ſtaid them all, and then dreſſed himſelf, and having brought out with him two Hats and two pair of Shooes, and Stockings; he threw one Hat into the Pond, and left one pair of Shooes and Stockings, by the Pond ſide, and ſo went to a Neighbours houſe near home, and hid himſelf in a Barn.

The Father being reſolved to fetch him up the next morning, expected his coming home that Night, but to no purpoſe, for he came not; and although diligent inquiry was made among the Neighbour-hood, yet there was news to be heard of him. The Father was troubled, but the Mother much more, not knowing what was become of him; early the next morning all the Servants were ſent out ſeveral ways to inquire after him; at length, ſome of his Companions were met withal, who, upon inquiry told them, that they had ſeen him the Evening before, in ſuch a Pond; the Servants hearing this, went thither, and there they ſaw the killing ſight of the hat, and ſhoes, and Stockings; they then concluded, as he intended they ſhould, that he was drowned; thoſe remains of

his being, as they thought, but too ſure Evidence of that fatal truth, They inquired no further at preſent, but went home and told their Maſter, and Miſtreſs, the ſad news of their Sons misfortune; he was much dejected at the telling of that diſmal Relation, but ſhe was now as one diſtracted, exclaiming againſt her Husband, whoſe ſeverity towards her dear Son, ſhe ſaid, had been the cauſe of this his unhappy Fate: her Friends could not comfort her, neither could her Husbands perſwaſions work any thing upon her, but that ſhe would go to the place where her Son had periſhed. Her Husband diſſwaded her againſt this, and promiſed that he would have the Pond ſearched, and thereupon gave order to employ a couple of Fellows to rake the Pond all over, but to no purpoſe; for although they were paid for their pains, yet they loſt their labour.

And now the Father finding that the Body of his Son was not to be found dead, was in hopes that he might yet hear of him alive; and he endeavoured to perſwade his Wife into this opinion.

In the mean time our young Gentleman lay perdue in the Neighbours Barn; and being provided with ſufficient Provant, was as ſafe as a Thief in a Mill; and although he was at that diſtance from home, yet he could hear of the diſtraction his Father and Mother were in, for it was all the News of the place, that Mr. *R*'s Son was drowned, to the great grief of his Father and Mother: he was well pleaſed to hear that they were ſo ill pleaſed; and thought now he ſhould be revenged on them that were reſolved to be revenged on him; the conſideration of his Mothers ſorrow was great joy to him, and he hoped to reap

this

this benefit that he might for the future rule, and reign in his Roguery; hoping that his Father and Mother would leave him to his own diſpoſe; leſt he ſhould hereafter do that in earneſt, that they would now find in jeſt: but thinking that they had not as yet ſuffered enough for what they had made him ſuffer, a two days impriſonment, whereas he had not been wanting above one day; he was therefore reſolved to ſtay there a little longer, but he was ſoon after diſcovered: for being ſomewhat cleanly, and leaving his Lodging, to go into the yard to untruſs, one of the Family came and ſaw him; he would have fled, but his Breeches being about his heels hindred him; ſo that at the exclamation of that party who ſaw him, all the reſt of the Family where he was hid came out to him; and ſeeming joyed to ſee him, asked him a hundred queſtions at once, to which he gave them never a word of anſwer; but they minded not his humour much, but being joyful of his ſafety, now ſpake of acquainting his Father and Mother therewith; he knowing they would do ſo, and that quickly, told them that they might do do; but withal he deſired them to enjoyn his Father and Mother both, not to ask him any queſtions, for if they did, he ſaid he would not anſwer them; and beſides, it was likely it would be the worſe for them and him both. They hearing what he ſaid, did not inquire into his reaſons for what he had ſaid, but went home to his Parents, and told them how it was. At this joyful news the Father was well pleaſed; but the Mother was ſo overjoyed, that ſhe could not contain her ſelf from running to the place where he was; and there ſhe diſcovered the exceſs of her joy, by the exceſs of her paſſi-

on, which hurried her on to Extravagancies, in embracing, and kiſſing her Graceleſs Son, who received her expreſſions of Love with much indifferency and coldneſs: She did not obſerve that, but took all at the beſt; and being joyed that ſhe had him in her ſight, lead him home.

The Father being acquainted with his Son's Injunction, that he muſt not be asked any Queſtions, concluded from thence the true reaſon of it; however, he diſſembled his knowledge, and, to humour his Wife and Son, ſaid nothing to him, but commanded that he uſed no more of theſe tricks, and that then all that had paſſed already ſhould be forgotten. The Son gave him the hearing, but was reſolved to take his own ſwinge; and by this occaſion knowing the extreme love his Mother had for him, made very ill uſe of it, venturing to do any thing though never ſo debauched. For if his Mother did not give him enough, he wou'd ſteal it from her, and all her locking up from him was to as little purpoſe, as her Husbands locking up from her; for her Son would frequently come at her money; and ſhe would as often come at the Old mans: who was ſo accuſtomed to be diſpoſſeſſed of what money he had by his wife, that ſometimes the Son met with it, and diſappointed his Mother; but it was all as one, for that if ſhe did get it, it was but to beſtow on him.

The Old man ſeeing that his Locks and Keys would not keep his money ſecure, found out other inventions to hide it, which he did in ordinary unſuſpected places, as among the Sea-coals, or in ſome hole of the Houſe or Garden. But the Son one time met with a purſe of ten pound; and that being too much to be ſpent

ſpent in one day, he ſtaid out a whole week; his Mother was now diſtracted as before, for his abſence, but the father ſoon miſſing his money, and believing that his Son had met with it, was ſatisfied that he would ſtay abroad till it was ſpent, and ſo he did; for at the weeks end he came home as confidently, as if he had done no harm. Although his Mother, out of joy for the return of her Prodigal, was well enough ſatisfied with his theft, yet the Old man once more was reſolved to correct him: and therefore getting him up into a Garret, locked him up till ſuch time as he might prepare himſelf for the Correction he intended. This young Extravagant being thus incarcerated, ſet his wits at work how to get out; at length he found a Gutter-window, and ſaw that he might get out to the top of the Houſe; this he reſolved to do, but withal he intended once again to put his Mother to the fright; and thereupon ſearching the Garret, he found all ſorts of materials and utenſils fit for his deſign; he firſt took an old Doublet and Breeches, and ſtuffed them full of rags, ſtraw, and ſuch rubbiſh as he could find, and then he took ſhooes and ſtockins and ſtuffed the ſtockings full of bran; and making ſomewhat like a head, he put his hat on it; and putting the Coat he wore over all this, he put a rope about the neck of this Scare-crow, and ſo hanged it on one of the beams in the Garret; when he had put his matters in this order, he ſat down, and being well pleaſed at his own invention, laughed as heartily now as he knew his Mother would cry when ſhe came to ſee it; and having thus beſtowed this Scar-crow, he got out to the top of the houſe, and ſat there *perdue*, expecting the event.

His Father being provided with all things neceſſary for the correction he intended him, mounted up ſtairs, and with him a Neighbour whom he had called to his aſſiſtance; and being come to the Garret-door, and having opened it, he cried out, where are you, Sirrah, that I may correct you: there was no anſwer, nor Son to be ſeen, (as he expected) walking; but it was not long ere he ſaw him, as he ſuppoſed, hanging between Heaven and Earth.

Although the Old man came with a reſolution to chaſtiſe his Son, yet he at this killing ſpectacle fell down, and appeared more dead than alive; and the man who accompanied him, ſeeing the Son, as he ſuppoſed, hanging quite dead, and the Father in little better condition, he ran down and allarm'd the houſe with this deadly news.

The Mother, although ſhe was ready to fall down dead with grief, yet her diſtraction hurried her to the place of her Sons ſuppoſed execution, that ſhe might dye there; by ſuch time as ſhe was come thither, the Father was come to himſelf, but was almoſt killed again with the bitter words ſhe gave him, telling him, he was her Sons murderer, calling him wretched old Rogue, and uſing terms the moſt vile and outragious ſhe could imagine; and then ſhe fell into a violent fit of crying, and tearing her cloathes and hair, ſo that ſhe ſeemed quite diſtracted: her Son heard all this, and laugh'd at the conceit that his project had ſo well taken; and the Mother, now in another fit, ariſing, to catch hold of her Sons body, which ſhe ſuppoſed went was hanging; but when ſhe came to it, thinking to graſp it, it being light, flew from her at the firſt touch,

and

and the hat falling off, it was ſoon diſcovered what it was.

All preſent were amazed at the contrivance; but the Mother ſtill continued crying out, if this be not, where then is my Son? At this all ſought about the room; and at length one looking out at a Garret-window, ſaw him ſiton the Houſe-top; his mother was ſoon acquainted with this pleaſant news; to which ſhe ſoon replyed, Oh, bring him in: but he hearing her, replyed, that if his Father did not go down and leave threatning of him, he would throw himſelf from the houſe-top, and kill himſelf in earneſt: the Father thinking that the deſperate humour might take him, was forced to be content; and ſo our young man deſcended the houſe, and came in at the window, to the great joy of his ſorrowful Mother.

CHAP. XXI.

Our young Extravagant Cheats his Father of more money by receiving Rent; which being ſpent, he returned home; and his Mother refuſing to give him what money he deſired, ſhe being on Horſe-back behind him, he threatens to throw her into the water, and ſo he obtains it of her. The Old man dies, and he proſecutes his extravagancies upon Watermen, Coach-men and a poor Pudding; he alſo puts a trick upon a Barber; and plays a fine freack at a Coffee-houſe; and being Poetical, makes Verſes on Canary.

BY this Project our young man eſcaped the correction his Father intended him; and not only ſo, but his Mother now looking on him, as one twice riſen from the dead, was ſo fooliſhly fond, as to hug and embrace him; all this he took in good part, as knowing this fond humour of his Mothers would turn to his advantage; for he having now put her twice to this fright, ſhe was fearful that the third time would prove fatal in earneſt; wherefore ſhe now ſupplied him with Moneys to exceſs; and he ſpent it as Prodigally, as he came by it lightly. But the good old man keeping her ſhort, her ſtock was not large enough to ſupply him in all his exceſſes, and then the Old man led a weary life with his wife, till ſhe procured him to give her Son, who was now fifteen years of age, a certain allowance: he demanded fifty pound a year, beſides his Diet; but this the old man ſaid was unreaſonable; and he alledged,

it

it would be more to the profit of his Son, and himſelf both, to put him out to be an Apprentice to a good Trade; but neither the Mother nor Son would give any hearing to this Propoſition; but in anſwer to it, the Mother ſaid what, and have I but one Child, and muſt he be made a Servant? I ſcorn it; ſure you intend to make ſome body elſe your Heir, ſome Baſtards that you have abroad, or elſe you would not offer to deſire or think that your only Son and Heir ſhould be an Apprentice and make clean Shooes, and ſweep the Stret-doors; have I bred him up to this? Thus did the Woman anſwer her Husband, and ſo put him by from ever making any more ſuch offers; and ſhe alledging that her Son was now man enough to manage an Eſtate of five hundred pound *per annum*; and that therefore his Father might do well to intruſt him with fifty pound *per annum*; but he ſtill alledging it was too much, and it would ſpoil him; at laſt, after a long conteſt, forty pound *per annum* was agreed on: The Old man now intending thus much for his Son, gave him two Acquittances to go to two of his Tenants to receive five pound a piece of them, it being their laſt Quarters Rent.

The young man ſuppoſing himſelf a Landlord, went among the Tenants, and intending to out-wit his Father, managed his Affairs accordingly; wherefore when he came to the place where ſome of his Fathers Tenents dwelt, he went to a two Pot-houſe, and ſent for three or four of them which he beſt knew, and telling them that his Father had ordered him to receive that Quarters Rent, withal produced the two Acquittances he had; theſe two paid him preſently, and the reſt did ſo likewiſe, he telling them that he had

had left their Acquaintances under his Fathers own hand at home; but that he would give them Acquittances with his hand to his Fathers uſe, which would do as well. This excuſe went as current, and the Tenents were well pleaſed to pay their money to him, and thereby hoped to ingratiate themſelves with their young Landlord; and thus he received twenty pound, inſtead of the ten pound intended; and had received more of the other Tenants, if his Father, ſuſpecting ſome ſuch matter, had not gone, and by his preſence prevented it.

There he ſoon found what his Son had done; which however turned ſomewhat to his advantage: for all the Tenants hearing their young Landlord had been there, and expecting him to come again ſuddenly had provided all the rent, hoping by that means to gain his good opinion, and a Treatment to boot, as the reſt had done: ſo that now the Old man received all the rent at his firſt coming, whereas he was wont to come half a dozen times. And now having received his rents, he went home to his Wife, telling her, how their Son had ſerved him; to which ſhe replyed, that it was no matter, for to her knowledge he was bare, and quite out of moneys before, and that this would ſtock him. And now ſhe having gained an allowance for her Son, ſhe never left her Husband, till he increaſed her own, and gave her money to buy her ſome Clothes, as ſhe pretended; and all this was to lay up for her unlucky-Bird, who, as his Father ſaid, ſtaid out till all was ſpent; and that was within ſo many days as he had pounds: and he being rid of his money returned home to pillage his Mother. He had made no ſpare of his Money ſo long as it laſted, in hopes

to

to receive more of his Fathers Tenants; but he came thither too late, his Father having been there before him; ſo that being diſappointed, he came home, and very quietly he demeaned himſelf for ſome time.

But the humour of rambling again poſſeſſing him, he courted his Mother for Money, ſhe gave him ſome, but it was but ſparingly, and he ſtomached it, becauſe he had no more. A few days after, his Mother was to ride to *London*, to lay out ſome Moneys in neceſſaries; and ſhe being deſirous of his Company, cauſed him to ride before her; they being thus mounted together, put on very handſomly, till being come about half way, he guided the Horſe into a Pond; ſhe wondring, asked him his reaſon; he told her, only to water the Horſe; but when the Horſe was now in as far, and as deep as he could go, he ſhewed her another reaſon, told her another tale, and deſired her to give him ſome money, ſhe replyed, ſhe had none for him; he anſwered that he knew ſhe had money about her, and therefore he muſt and would have ſome; ſhe ſaid ſhe had no more but what ſhe was to lay out, and if ſhe gave him any ſhe muſt looſe her Journey; he cared not for that, but told her, that if ſhe did not give him ſome Money, he would throw her into the Pond, and thereby enforce her to loſe her Journey; and he ſwore to it, that he would do it. She doubting that he would be as good as his word, was forced to compound the matter with him, and of five pounds, which ſhe had about her, ſhe hardly compounded with him for fifty Shilings; which he would not take her word for, but ſhe was forced there, as ſhe was on Horſe-back, to deliver it to him, and then he rode on; but although ſhe had her Sons Company to *London*,

don, and paid ſo dear for it, yet ſhe was forced to go home without him, he being there engaged upon the Ramble for ſo long as that money would laſt, and then home he came again; and this trick he would ſerve her as often as he wanted money, and could get her on Horſe-back behind him; and as he gained, and filched from her, ſo ſhe did the ſame from the Old man and all little enough to maintain her Prodigal Sons extravagances; and this was the courſe of life they all lead.

The young man he ſpent largely, and pinched all he could from his Mother; ſhe cheated her Husband egregiouſly to ſupply his Prodigality; and the old man he ſcrewed all he could get, moſt ſhamefully and penuriouſly, out of his Tenants, and Debtors, to ſupply them both. Theſe were his Tormentors, that ſtill kept him in perplexity; and in the end, what with Age, and grief at their miſcarriages he dyed, leaving all behind him to their diſpoſing.

The *Son* was joyful, neither was the Mother diſcontented; and the Old man had at his death, madeas prudent a Will as he could deviſe: for knowing that what he gave to the Mother, he gave to the Son; he dividing his Eſtate into three parts, gave two to her, and one to him; hoping by ſuch time as he ſhould have ſpent one third part, he might take up, and bewiſer; and then his Mother would be fit to give him another portion.

As ſoon as the old man was dead, order was taken for his Burial, which was by the Mother and *Sons* appointment ſplendid enough; but although the *Son* attended his Fathers Corps to the Grave, yet the Mother would not, as pretending to be ill, and withal, that it was a thing not in faſhion; under this pretence ſhe ſtaid at home: but there was a greater and more urgent cauſe; for ſhe had a luſty *Suitor* who attend-

ed

ed her, and him ſhe kept Company withal. The Son ſaw his Fathers Corps put into the ground, and was ſo wretched, as to command the Grave-maker to put him deep enough leſt he ſhould riſe again; and now ſeeing his Fathers Body faſt enough, he went a Rambling, and that very night was taken in the Watch at his return home; but being known, he was paſſed the Watch, and coming home heard how his Mother had beſtowed her time in his abſence; this raiſed ſome doubts and ſcruples in his mind, doubting, that ſhe might, and would marry and then defeat him of his expectations; wherefore, although he was not yet twenty years of Age, yet he deſired his Portion, but that could not be; however ſuch courſe was taken by ſome of his Fathers Friends, that his Portion was ſecured for him; and in the mean time it was agreed, that he ſhould have a conſiderable allowance. But all this did not pleaſe him; for although what was allowed him, was ſufficient to maintain him handſomly, yet he ſpent three times as much, and ran into every Bodies ſcore that would truſt him; he was ſoon aweary of his Mourning Apparel, and therefore in few Months threw that off, and a Suit that coſt fifty pounds was provided; in this he did vaunt it, and Rant it about the Town, and all the looſe Fellows of no Fortune were his hangers on, or Companions. He ſpun away the time of his Non-age with all impatience; but when the happy, and long-wiſhed for-day came, he was the joyfulleſt man alive. By that time his Mother was married to the Suitor who had put in ſo early; but being cunning (as moſt Widows are) ſhe had reſerved her Sons Eſtate entire, and not only ſo, but a conſiderable part of her own; ſo that her

her Husband had not above one third part of the whole. And now her Son without any controul, demanded, and received his full Portion; many hard words paſſed between Mother and Son on that account, ſo that they fell out in earneſt; and he taking what was his due, gave her the good bu'y.

And now was the time come that he took his full ſwinge in all manner of voluptuouſneſs and debauchery. Taverns were the beſt places he frequented, as having ſomewhat for his money: But that expence was not deep enough; he hunted out and frequented all Houſes of good fellowſhip.

All the moſt eminent *Bona Roba's* about the Town were of his acquaintance; and he was not content to have their Company in common, but ſearching out thoſe that beſt pleaſed him, he took them from their Publick Employment, and kept them for his own private pleaſures, diſpoſing them in ſeveral places, as he had occaſion to uſe them; and commonly keeping three or four of theſe at Livery; and, which was worſe than all this, that he might put the ſooner diſpatch to his Eſtate, he frequented Ordinaries, and Gaming Houſes and there ſuffered himſelf to be cheated to ſome purpoſe.

The Mother hearing of theſe his exorbitant extravagancies, went, and ſent to him (for he would not come to her) to diſſwade him from theſe courſes; but in ſtead of that, he returned wild and extravagant anſwers, upbraiding her with her ſenſuality in her ſecond Marryage; and expreſſed himſelf ſo rudely on that account, that I am aſhamed to repeat it.

I will relate ſome particulars of extravagancies, becauſe it exceeds all that I have heard of. He went one time

time to the Temple-ſtairs, and perceiving a great many Water-men, both Oars and Scullers, attending for Fares, but more eſpecially for the Lawyers of that place, to carry them to *Weſtminſter*, it being Term-time; and being reſolved on a frollick, to diſappoint them, he hired all of them, to carry him, and two or three of his Companions, to the Old *Swan*; ſo that when the Lawyers came to take Boat, there was none for them; and they were forced to beat upon the hoof, or be at the charge of Coaches.

Another time, he being importuned by Water-men, who uſually clutter about a Fare, ſtriving who ſhall earn the money; and only having occaſion to croſs the Water, he hired four of them to tranſport him juſt over, and gave them ſix pence a piece for their pains; and then they wanting other employment, he told them, that if they would fight with one another, he would give them ſix pence a piece more; and he, to invite them to it, cauſed them to quarrel with one another, and ſo to it they fell luſtily; he ſtanding by, and laughing at them.

Thus did he uſe the Water-men; and he was Extravagant with the Coach-men; for ſometimes, although he valued not his Money, yet he would in a frollick, get out of the Coach, and leave them in the hurry to look their pay-maſter; but if they knew, and met with him again, and demanded it handſomly, he would pay them double.

He met with one Coach man, a ſurly, dogged fellow, and he ſerved him accordingly; for he had been hurrying about, from one place to another, to find out Company, all that Afternoon; and at night he demanded of the Coachman what he muſt have; he replyed

plyed, eight ſhillings, which was too much by three ſhillings; and he not being in the humour to part with his money ſo ſlightly, and being withal very well acquainted with the prices of Hackney-Coach-men, he, for that time, refuſed to give him his demands; and the fellow began to be ſurly, peremptory, and ſawcy; ſo that he had a great mind to have beaten him: but ſeeing he was a rugged fellow, he would not venture on that Revenge, but bethought himſelf of another; which he thus effected.

Well, replyed he to the Coach-man, I will content you, before we part; but now I think on it, I muſt go a little further, to ſuch a place, naming it. The Coach-man was content; and thereupon, he and his Servant went into the Coach; it was now dark, it being Winter; and he had the better conveniency of executing his project; which he did thus. He drew out his Knife, and he, and his Man together did cut all the leather round on the back of the Coach, leaving it hanging by the top; and by this time being come to the place he appointed, he was there ſet down, and gave the Coach-man his hire; who not perceiving the dammage done to his Coach, departed; and our Gallant drinking a quart of Wine, and calling for another Coach, was carried home.

The next day, the Coach-man, after much inquiry, found out our Gentlemans Quarters; and waiting his coming out, told him, that he had done him forty ſhillings worth of dammage in cutting the Leather of his Coach; he denied the fact, and bid him prove it: the other told him, that he would take his oath of it before any Juſtice of the Peace; and if (ſaid he) you will not give me ſatisfaction, I will have you before

before a Juſtice, and he will compel you to do it. Our Gentleman hearing him talk ſo of the Juſtice, was reſolved to frighten the Fellow, and out-wit him; and therefore he replyed, Nay, tehn, if you talk of a Juſtice, you were beſt have a care of your ſelf how you come there, leſt I have you ſent to New-gate. For what? replied the Coach-man. You need not make ſo ſtrange of it, replyed our Gallant; you believe no body ſaw you yeſterday what you did in the field near *Putney*, where you carried me? Why, what did I do? replyed the Coach-man. Why, you buggered a Sow there, replyed our Gentleman, Oh Lord! ſaid the Coach-man. And oh Lady too! ſaid our Oentleman, it is too true, and you will find it ſo to your coſt; both my ſelf, and my man ſaw it, and will take our Oaths of it if we go before the Juſtice. Our Gallants man hearing what his Maſter had ſaid, juſtified and averred the truth with an Oath; which put the poor Coach-man into ſuch a dump, that he went away with a flea in his ear, and durſt not inſiſt upon our Gentlemans payment for the dammage done to his Coach. This was the courſe our extravagant took; theſe were the tricks he plaid; and in general, there was no manner of miſchief but he put in practice; and he ſo much prided, and gloried in doing ſo, that although it were well known he was wicked enough, yet he would not talk and boaſt of more than he had done; and there was no particular debauched action, or extravagancy done in *London*, but he would boaſt himſelf to be the Author of it, and imitate it to his power. He had obſerved, that a poor woman ſat at one of the City-Gates, and ſold hot pudding by the pound; he had a crotchet came in his

Crown, to put a trick upon this Woman; and therefore having a Companion with him, he acquainted him with his intent, and deſired his aſſiſtance. He who kept him Company was as ready as his Worſhip for any miſchief; and therefore together they came to this poor woman, who was newly come with her pudding piping hot from the Bake-houſe, and demanded the price; ſhe told them four pence a pound: he agreed to the price, and ſhe weighed out a pound: ſhe had asked him what he would do with it? for ſhe, ſeeing his gaudy Clothes, and partly knowing him, ſaid, that he would not eat it. He replied, it was no matter to her what he did with it, ſo long as ſhe was paid for it. She knowing he had ſaid true, delivered it to him in a handkerchif. He having the pudding, drew out a ſix pence, and throwing it on the ground, bid her take it up, She ſtooping ſo to do, his Companion turned up her Coats, and he clapt the hot pudding to her naked poſteriors. The woman, feeling it hot, cryed out amain; but he ſtill held it there, and preſſed it hard upon her, whereupon ſhe leapt away from them; and being ſenſible that ſhe was ſcalded, ſhe ran to the kennel, and taking up her coats, clapt her bare buttocks in the dirt, to cool and aſſwage the heat, whilſt our Extravagant, and his Companion marched off.

The woman was ſo paid off, that ſhe could not follow her employment; and acquainting her Husband with the matter, and the party who; he, the next day, found him out, and demanded ſatisfaction for the dammage he had done to his Wife. Our young man diſowned the fact, and refuſed all ſatisfaction: but the Good man was ſure enough that it was he; for by this

this time he had (according to his uſual cuſtom) bragged of this exploit ſo that the man being in earneſt, and telling him, that if he would not pay for the Cure, and the dammage he ſuſtained by his wives neglect of her buſineſs, that he would arreſt him, and compel him by Law. He therefore in a humour gave the man twenty ſhillings, and ſo ended this frollick of the Pudding-woman.

There hardly paſſed a day, but he was guilty of ſome frollick or other; and if he had the humour of doing, he would go through with it, though it coſt his pockets never ſo dear: Some of his frollicks were ſomewhat more harmleſs, but altogether as comical and pleaſant. If he had heard of any frollicks, though never ſo extravagant and old, he would attempt to do the like; and many ſuch he did only in imitation and to renew the diſcourſe of them. As for example: he was uſed to have the Barber, for the moſt part, to come to him; and although he had no beard (for he was never known to have above five hairs on one ſide of his face, and ſeven on the other) yet he was uſually ſhaved every day. But one day he went to a Barbers to be trim'd, and ſitting down in the Chair, the Barber fell to his work. He intended to have ſome frollick with this Barber; and the Barber gave him a very good occaſion and opportunity: for the Barber having occaſion to make water, and being ſomewhat lazy, piſſed about his ſhop. Our Gallant asked his reaſon; and told him, it was a naſty trick. To which the Barber pleaded, for excuſe, that it was no great matter, for he was to leave the ſhop in a weeks time, and to remove to another, and therefore it would not annoy him much. This action, and anſwer, fell out

for our Gallant, as fit as pudding for a Friers-mouth; and therefore he was reſolved to proſecute his intended project; and he did ſo tickle himſelf with laughing at the conceit that he intended, that the Barber could hardly ſhave him, without indangering the cutting of his Throat or Chaps.

But that was done in time, and our Gentleman was delivered from the impriſonment of the Chair, when in the proſecution of his intended Project, he asked *Cutbert* whether he had any ſorts of ſweet powder? He ſhewed him what he had below, and that not pleaſing him, he went up ſtairs to fetch more: no ſooner did he mount up the ſtairs, but down went our Gallants breeches, and there in the middle of the Shop, he laid the biggeſt load he could exonerate himſelf of. He made all the haſte he could, and juſt as the Barbar deſcended down ſtairs, up went his Breeches, The Barber, although he had ſweet Powder in his hand, yet he could not only ſmell, but ſee that there was ſomewhat in the Shop that was not ſo ſweet to the ſcent, nor pleaſant to the ſight; wherefore he alſo asked his Cuſtomer his Reaſon for ſo doing? He replied, he had the very ſame reaſon for disburthening himſelf, as he had; for ſaid he, I am to leave the ſhop preſently, and it will not annoy me much. The Barbar ſeeing that he was beaten at his own weapon, made no reply, but was forced to be content; and our Gallant left the Shop and the Barbar; to go among his Companions, to boaſt of this witty exploit. This was talk enough for him for ſome days. But he ſtill ſtudied, by ſuch time as one was ſtale, to project and execute another; and it was not long after ere he met with with one altogether as extravagant, and much like the other. Al-

Although he was a great Drinker, yet he did fight cunningly, and would not let one drop of Wine go down his belly in the morning, nor hardly admit of any mornings-draught though never ſo moderate; forbearing all drinking, till the affairs of the Gut, the eating were over; and then, as he uſed to ſay, it would do your heart good to ſee him take off his Liquor, eſpecially *Sack*, which was his chiefeſt delight; and he would bear it very luſtily, and with the help of a Coach get to his Lodging in very good order.

But one time he had miſſed and omitted this cuſtom, and drank all day without eating, ſo that the next morning his belly and head were both filled with airy humours, his belly asked and croaked, and his head was giddy, wanting ſettlement; wherefore, ſome Friends who came to viſit him, adviſed him to drink ſome *Coffee*; he believing that in regard it was to be drunk hot, that it might heat his Guts, and qualifie his brain went to a *Coffee*-houſe with them; where being ſat down, and having put two warm diſhes full into his Guts, it made him break wind forwards and backwards both; at which unuſual noiſe among ſo many people as were there together, he was more than uſually ſtared not; he minded not their ſtaring, but continued in drinking; and withal obſerved the ſeveral poſtures uſed in drinking their *Coffee*; ſome he ſaw laid their Noſe, ſome their eyes, nay, and ſome their ears to the *Coffee*-diſh, to let the ſmoak, or ſume of the *Coffee* aſcend; at this unuſual ſight he asked the reaſon of it; and it was generally replyed, that it was an excellent remedy againſt the Cold which they had gotten in thoſe parts; he hearing them ſay ſo, had an extravagant humour come into his brain; and I

dare ſay, if the Company would have given him twenty pound, he would not have forborn the execution of it; but thus proceeded: He called for the largeſt Diſh of *Coffee* in the houſe; it being filled, he ſet it in the middle of the *Coffee*-room, and letting down his Breeches, he turned up his ſhirt, and placed his Bum juſt over the *Coffee*-diſh. All the Company wondring and laughing at this Extravagancie; he cryed out, Nay, Gentlemen, you need not laugh ſo hard, for I do no otherwiſe then you have directed me, for you all ſay *Coffee* is good for a Cold, and to your knowledg my *Podex* hath gotten a Cold, for it coughed ſince I came in hither; and therefore do but as I was directed, to let the fumes of the *Coffee* aſcend to to the place affected. Having now had his frollick, he put up his Breeches, and ſitting down among the Company, gave them all occaſion to exerciſe their eyes in ſtaring on him; and he again entertained them with ſuch fantaſtical diſcourſe, as made them believe that he was more Knave than Fool, and enough of both.

You may judge by this (ſaid Mrs. *Mary*) of the reſt of his Extravagancies; and this was the dayly exerciſe of his wit, which (as you may underſtand) was not barren in inventing all manner of debaucheries; and indeed, had he had ſomewhat to exerciſe his wit on that which was ingenuous or good, he muſt have been ſucceſsful enough, for he had a ſtrong memory, for he retained all he read, he never forgot the leaſt, or ſlighteſt ſtory that he had once read over: he read but little, and that was of the pleaſanteſt ſort of reading, books of Knight-Errantry; and of them he knew all, and could relate all the ſtories, from

Tom

Tom Thumb to *Amadis de Gaule*, and the Mirrour of Knight-hood. All the *Palmerins*, and *Primaleons*, he knew as well as if he had gon to School with them; he knew the Father, Son, and Grandfather; and frequented Bookſellers Shops only to inquire for more parts of thoſe Hiſtories. Don *Bellianis* of *Greece* was a brave Knight with him; and he was wont to ſay, that it was great pity that ſome Ingenuous Pen did not proſecute the adventure of that honour of Chivalry in a ſecond part: he was intended to have done it himſelf, if he could but have ſpared ſo much time. From this Hiſtory he proceeded to *Caſſandra* and *Cleopatra*; but thoſe *Hero*'s and Ladies were of too ſtrict and virtuous an inclination for his converſe: the looſe *Galaor*, Brother to Sr. *Amadis*, was a man for his Money, being one who was a general lover of all Ladies. He had alſo read over *Orlando Furioſo* in verſe; and was very much in love with mine Hoſts Tale to *Rodamant*, of the looſneſs of Women; this he commended above any thing in the book; and in all his readings he imitated the Spider, and not the Bee, in ſucking the Poiſon, not the Honey from them. By means of this converſe with Poetical books, he was ſo much infected with Poetry, that he could verſifie and ryme indifferently; and being in love with Canary, he beſtowed ſome time in compoſing theſe Verſes on that Divine Liquor.

An Encomium on Canary.

THou glory of this glorious Nation,
Spains *best Child, her Pride, her Reputation:*
Her India, *her* Peru, *her best Wealth*;
Thou art Fortune, Pleasure, Riches, Health,
Companion to the Worthies, giving birth,
To Hector *Valour, and to* Cæsar *Mirth:*
Nay, and sometimes sole Commander
Of the Worlds All commanding Alexander.

Ye Muses guide unto the pleasant Spring,
Where you inchanting sit, and chanting sing
Such Roundelays, that those which do draw near,
Are no more fed by th' eye, but by the ear.
There is no Musick nought that cheers the heart,
If Don Canary does not bear his part.

Gazing Astronomers had never found
How the great Axle of the World wheels round
Had they not tasted Sack: 'tis Sack's the eye
Of solid Logick, and Philosophy.
Nay, be you ne're so strongly grounded,
If you contend with Sack, you'l be confounded.

Your Learn'd Physitians, *famous for their skill,*
Give Drugs to others whom they mean to kill;
But mark them who so please, in hugger-mugger,
They cure themselves meerly with Sack and Sugar.
Should we to former Ages but look back,
There you should find the strange effects of Sack:

Shall I ascend to Jove, *the Heavens Protector?*
What is that drink call'd by the Poets, Nectar?
Was't not Canary? yes, there's nothing truer,
For all men know, that Bacchus *was his Brewer:*
Who by Canary, as 'its poetis'd,
Became a God, and was Immortalliz'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Our Extravagant uſes ſtrange wayes to raiſe moneys; which being got in, he takes a journey into the Countrey, marries, and returns; meets with one of his Companions, who laid a wager about their Footmens drinking: he being indebted to our Extravagant, and not in a capacity to pay him till his Fathers death; he projects a way to kill the Father; and not come within the compaſs of the Law; he undertakes and performs it. This Extragant's anſwer to his Mother; and his getting a ſuit of Clothes of a ſtrange Taylor. He cheats at the water-ſide, and and cheats Gentlemen of ſeveral Cloakes, which he ſells to a Broker, who upon ſome diſcontent claps him in priſon, where he again expreſſes his Poetry.

OUr Gallant thus exerciſed his wit, and ſpent his time; and as this Old man, the Father, had in his latter years employed his whole wit and induſtry in gaining of moneys, and enlarging his Eſtate; ſo the Young man, the Son, employed all his in ſpending, and leſſening it. The Fathers ways of getting money was by uſury; and the Son, on the contrary, was ſo great a hater of that vice, and ſin of uſury, as he termed it, that he would not receive any; and being deſirous to raiſe a great ſum of money together, he ſent to his Debtors, and told them that if they would by a certain time, then to come, bring him in his principal money, he would forgive them all intereſt. There were few of them that ſtood out; for the Father having been wary in diſpoſing his money on good ſecu-

ſecurity, the Son had the leſs trouble to gather it in; and few of the Debtors failed to bring in our Prodigals Money, and take up their bonds. Some there were whoſe debts were conſiderable and large, and they could not provide their Moneys by the time, but loſt that advantage: but again ſome of them gained more conſiderably then the reſt had done; for he by this means believing that all thoſe debts that were not paid him were deſperate and bad, he fell to ſelling and aſſigning them; which the Debtors hearing of, although they could not raiſe the ready money themſelves, yet the Security being good, they procured Friends to lay down the Moneys, and compounded the Debts for ſome two thirds, ſome three quarters, ſome more, ſome leſs, he being willing to take, and unwilling to refuſe all Moneys that he could thus bring in. And by this means being maſter of a conſiderable ſum of Money, and being of his *London* frollicks, he reſolved for the Countrey; and providing himſelf with choice of Geldings, and variety of Rich Clothes for himſelf, and new Liveries for his two Servants, he took his journey. I cannot give you any particular account of his tranſactions in the Countrey, becauſe it was at two great a diſtance; but in general, I heard he plaid over his old freaks, the ſecond part to the ſame tune: but this I know, that paſſing for a man of a great Eſtate, and being plentifully furniſhed with Moneys, he was admitted into the Family of a Perſon of Quality; where, however he carryed himſelf abroad, yet at home he was ſo civil, as that courting the Daughter, he obtained hers and her Friends conſent to a Marriage. They queſtioned not his Eſtate, (which they knew had been conſiderable) becauſe

cauſe he demanded no portion: and thus was our wild Gallant become a ſtaid man, if Marriage would make him ſo; but although it might operate ſomewhat at firſt, yet that good humor held him not long for he was ſoon weary of any thing that was good; and, as I heard his wife being ſo, he was the ſooner weary of her: and therefore, and becauſe the Money he had brought with him was ſpent and gone, he was then again for *London*. I ſuppoſe he engaged himſelf to return ſpeedily; but he who never kept any ingagement, was ſure to break that: And now being come to *London*, he viſited all his old Friends; but there was not one word of the pudding; he would not own the alteration of his condition, but had a mind ſtill to paſs for a Batchelor; for under that notion he might practiſe his debaucheries the more freely; for he did intend to cheat any maid, that would be ſo eaſie, of the moſt precious Jewel they had; whether he did, or how many fell into his ſnare, I know not; but he boaſted of many ſuch conqueſts. He being now come to *London*, and his errand Money, Money he would have; and therefore he ſummoned all the remaining Debtors to make ſudden payment.

Although he had already received ſeveral conſiderable ſums, and that more than he had preſent occaſion to make uſe of; yet not one good turn, or courteſie would he do any man, though never ſo near and dear to him: he had rather ſpend 40*s*. to make a man drunk, than lend him 20*s*.

But there was one, a certain Companion of his, who was almoſt as debauched as himſelf, and would have been altogether ſo, had he had the means to have done

doneit. This Perſon having a Father alive, whom he would willingly have exchanged for a dead one; and whom he was very deſirous to have kneel in Braſs, or lean in Marble: This Father was a great trouble to our young mans proceedings and our Gallant having conſider'd his caſe, as it had been formerly his own, being deſirous to propagate, and aſſiſt in the work of deformation, had at ſeveral times furniſhed him with the ſum of fifty pounds; and now he being reſolved to have at all, get in all he could, he gave this Friend a ſummons, who failed not to meet him at the time, and place appointed; and he came well enough provided, and appointed with money for a drinking bout, though not to pay Money. They ſet to it luſtily, and drank off their Sack very ſtoutly; and whilſt our two young Gentlemen were thus employed, their Servants were not idle. Our Gallant was now attended but by one of his two Foot-men; and the other, who had alſo a Foot-man, or Attendant, who was acquainted with the other; and they having been for ſome time ſeparated, by reaſon of our Gallants Journey, and now being met again, were ſo joyful to ſee themſelves alive, that they drank of their Sack as faſt as their Maſters: They had leave to do ſo, and might call for what they pleaſed. Our Gallant having occaſion to go into the next Room, there found his Man, and the other engaged in hot ſervice; but obſerved, that his Man being the ſtouter drinker of the two, had the better on it, and was the likeliſte ſo to hold it; wherefore a conceit came into his head, and then out it muſt; thereupon, he called his Companion to him, and ſhewed him their Servants; he was as well pleaſed as the other, and encouraged his man to hold out; our Gallant hearing him ſay ſo, cryed, *Bear up*, Jack, *for*

I'le

I'le hold a piece of your head; done, ſaid the other, But although here was a great wager to be lay'd, yet there was no ſound bargain, nor Witneſs; and they hardly underſtood what they intended, ill the Maſter of the houſe was called up; and then he ſeeing there was like to be ſomewhat to his advantage, made this fair propoſition (as he called it) that the two fellows ſhould drink on, and he who firſt gave out, and was foyled, his Maſter ſhould pay the Reckoning: Content, ſaid one; content, ſaid another; and withal, loſe a piece, to be ſpent to morrow: They both agreed to this motion; and drawing out their Moneys, the Land-Lord kept ſtakes, and the Fellows ſtill held on their drinking, neither were the Maſters idle; and they all plyed their gears ſo well, that they could not remove their Quarters, but were all four inforced to ſtay there all night; only our Gallant had the honour of the day, for his man had quite knock'd down the other, and had laid him faſt aſleep; and he being on the ground ſtradled over him, like St. *George* over the Dragon, and drank off three Beer glaſſes of Sack in token of triumph; and then they were all carried to their Beds. The next morning they found themſelves more ſenſible then they had been the night before; but being in a Tavern, and remembring that that there was 20 *s.* in bank, there was no remedy, but that they muſt of neceſſity take a hair of the old dog; and therefore to it they went again, but with more ſobriety then the day before; for our Gallant, who commanded in chief, had no mind to drinking, it being againſt his Cuſtom to drink in a morning; and beſides that, he intended to propoſe the matter of money to his Companion, ſo that they drank but mode-

moderately; and our Gallant broke the ice by telling his Companion, that upon a certain accident that had lately fallen out, he had occaſion to raiſe a ſum of money, and therefore he deſired the other to help him to that which he had formerly lent him. The other briskly replyed with an Oath, that he asked him impoſſibilities; that there was not ſuch a ſum as 50 *l.* in Nature, nor could he expect to ſee ſo much together, till the happy day of his Fathers death; and then ſaid he, if that long looked for day would but come, I will not only pay that ſum, but all elſe I have ſhall be at your diſpoſe.

Our Prodigal knew well enough that he ſhould hardly get his Money till the old fellow was dead, but however he thought to urge it to ſee if he could perſwade him to cheat his Father of ſuch a ſum, but the other replying he could not and that it was impoſſible to out-wit him, well reply'd our Gallant ſince that Jeſt will not take let us think of ſomewhat elſe, is the old fellow good conditioned? does he give you money enough to ſpend? truly replyed the other, he is very kind to me, for he allows me pretty largely, knowing that beſides Wine and good company; there are ſuch tranſitory things as women to be had; for keeping a good Girl himſelf, who is an old Knave, he knows the neceſſity of thoſe mortals for us that are young. How, replyed our blade, does he keep a Wench? then I have a ſure expedient to make him tip off the perch in a ſhort time. You may be deceived replyed the other, for as he is old, ſo he is tough and hath been a long time accuſtomed to *Venus* Wars. Well that matters not, reply'd our Gallant but if you will double my money, (for I muſt be at

ſome

ſome charge) I will undertake and warrant to ſend your Father into the other world in a very ſhort time. No reply'd the other I will have no hand in Murther eſpecially there being Parricide in the caſe. I tell thee, reply'd our undertaker, there ſhall be no hazard of the Law, no not ſo much guilt lye upon you nor me, whether as Phyſitians (who are authorized to kill) are guilty of to their Patients, and ſhall be both ſafe and ſure. Well how is it then reply'd our Companion. You ſay, ſaid our Gallant, your Father is very old, and loves a Wench. Why then ſaid our undertaker, all my buſineſs is but to know this Wench and be acquainted with her, and then the buſineſs is done, and that without fail. Thus much he told his Companion, but would not (though he importuned him) tell him any thing more. And thereupon he ſeeing that he could not at preſent get any thing more out of him, and withal aſſuring him that there was no danger in Law; the one concludes to act, and the other to aſſiſt in the enterprize. Accordingly that very afternoon our Extravagant was conducted by his Companion to the place where his Fathers Lady of pleaſure reſided. This young Woman whom he was ſo deſirous to be acquainted withal lived with one that was more antient, and whom ſhe called Aunt, and they two together with a Maid-ſervant that attended them both made up this little Family, in regard ſhe lived thus privately, he found it would be more difficult then ordinary to get acceſs, but the next day an opportunity fell out very convenient. For the old man (according to his cuſtom) having ſent in Proviſion for Dinner, came at noon to Dine with his Miſtreſs, and about three of the Clock he and his Miſtreſs and the Old Woman reſolved

ſolved on a walk. Our undertaker was ſo diligent that he attended them at ſome diſtance, and they going into a Publique houſe, he alſo went thither and took a Room next to their's. The Old Man treated his Miſtreſs with Cakes and Ale, and ſuch other Proviſion as the place afforded, and after they had ſufficiently regalled themſeves, the old man he muſt go about an affair of importance, and therefore he muſt leave them. Our Undertaker was glad to hear of that, and expected the happy minute of his departure, but he found that they all left the houſe together, wherefore he put himſelf in the way that they were to come, and walking ſoftly permitted the two Women to overtake him. He being a ſufficient Courtier wanted not pretence ſufficient to enter himſelf into their company, and the Women were not ſo reſerved as to diſtaſte or diſlike the proffered ſervice of his meen and quality.

The walk they were to take er'e they came to their quarters was conſiderable and thereby he had the opportunity to diſcourſe with the young beauty, which was not only handſom but of a pleaſant converſation. He knowing how far their journey reached offered them a Glaſs of Wine. The young woman wholly declined the propoſition, wherefore he applyed himſelf to the Old one; and her he over-ruled, ſo that they put in at the next Tavern, He promiſed them only one quart of Wine, but they drank three or four e're they parted, he did ſo Court the old Woman that ſhe took off her liquor freely, and made her ſo open hearted that ſhe diſcovered many of her copius ſecrets with the Old Man, who alſo ſimpered at the writal of them, our Gallants chief buſineſs being to win the young woman,

woman, thought that the neareſt way to do it, was to gain the Old, and therefore he not only plyed her with Wine but gave her ſome halfe-crown pieces, at the ſight of this ſhe called him Son and told him he ſhould be welcome.

He pulling out his money diſcovered ſome fair Medals which he ſhewing to the young woman, and ſhe ſeeming to like, he forced her to accept of them, thus he having laid the bait, did not queſtion but the Fiſh would in time be taken, he only waited on them to their Lodgings that night, but promiſing to reviſit them the next day, neither was he worſe then his word, but before hand he ſent ſeveral bottles of Wine.

And at this ſecond converſe he made ſo large a progreſs in his buſineſs, that he diſcovered that ſhe was not diſpleaſed with his Company; He finding her thus eaſie, proceeded as far as he could with her to the main point, but ſhe checked him there, being reſolved not to be won ſo eaſily; but he reſolving not to make Childrens Shoes, followed her ſo cloſe that he brought her to his bent, and received the ſatisfaction he deſired, She not diſtruſting the miſchief that was intended her, gave him all freedom with her, and he was ſeldom out of her Company but when the Old Man had appointed to be with her, our undertaker ſtill reſolving on his project ventured on one of the deſperateſt courſes that has been heard of.

It is not to be queſtioned but that he who had been ſo Univerſal a Courtier of Women, and that of all ſorts, had met with thoſe one time or another that had paid him off, and he was uſed to brag himſelf to be

more then a Gentleman, for he had been oftner then three times at *Haddam*, he was ſo well acquainted with all the effects of that diſeaſe, and the Remedies againſt it that he made nothing of it, and he knew ſeveral of his *quondam* Ladies who were then well p p-pered, to one of theſe he went, and it was not very difficult for him to purchaſe that of them which they would very gladly be rid off; and therefore he eaſily attained his deſires, and being thus accompanied, he went to his freſh Miſtreſs, and made her participate in that diſeaſe which ſhe had till then been a ſtranger to, and the Old Man coming ſoon after in his turn and thinking to have his pleaſure with her, had it for the preſent, but was ſo paid off that entring into a courſe of Phyſick to cure himſelf of his diſeaſe, he was brought ſo weak that he fell into another though leſs troubleſom yet more dangerous, which was not long in operating its deſired effects, for it carried him to his Grave. And thus did our undertaker perform his undertaking, and his Companion was ſo much a Gentleman as to perform his promiſe to give the ſum of Mony for his reward that he had been agreed upon, and our undertaker who had only made uſe of this young Woman as an Inſtrument to bring his purpoſe to effect, cauſed the young man to give her a reward for what ſhe had unknowingly endured and done.

His Companion was now the better man as having the more Money; but our Gallants ſtock held out to ſpend with him, and neither of them made any ſpare. Our Gallants Mother hearing of his lewd courſes, took ſome of her old Husbands acquaintance and found him out, ſhe and they perſwaded him to take up before all were ſpent, uſing many arguments

to

to induce him to good Husbandry, and propounding ſome courſe for him to take to redeem himſelf; but he was deaf to all perſwaſions, and only flouted and laughed at them; telling them that he was reſolved to make his dead Father a Lyar, for I remember (ſaid he) that ſome Friends telling him in his life time that I would ſpend his Eſtate after his death, he anſwered that ſo I might if I would, but he was certain that I wou'd never take ſo much pleaſure in ſpending it, as he had in getting it. And therefore ſaid he I am reſolved to enjoy my full ſwing in all manner of pleaſures, that I may diſprove him, and beſides (continued he) do you think I am mad to preſerve or keep any part of that Eſtate that was ſo unlawfully gained by penury and Uſury; no ſuch matter, for I am ſure it would be to no purpoſe to attempt it, for I know I ſhall never thrive while I enjoy any part of it, His Mother and Friends hearing his reſolution, by this his Extravagant anſwer, left him; and he profecuted his old courſe of Life ſo long, that he began really to want Money, and had ſtill ſpent his Money before he could receive it, ſome Debts he had ſtill owing him, which ſupplied him ſometimes by fits and girds. He had dealt with a Taylor who had taken much money of him, and gained well by him, but he ſtill paid him one under another, and was ſtill in his debt for the laſt, this Taylor ſeeing his Extravagancy, and doubting that in the winding up of the bottom he might looſe as much as he had gained, waited on him very diligently for his Money,& pretended ſuch urgent occaſions for Mony that he in the end got clear with him.

Our Gallant then deſired ſome more new cloathes, but he gave him only good words and put him off

from time to time, till one day our Gentleman meeting this Taylor in Company, asked him why he was not ſo good as his word to make him a new ſuit, for ſaid he you know I have been no ill Cuſtomer, I owe you nothing, it is confeſſed (replyed the Taylor) you do owe notning, but Sir there is a reaſon and that a very conſiderable one; why I do not care to deal with you, nor no others of your temper, what reaſon reply'd our Gallant, this (reply'd the Taylor) you do pay me, but you do call for my Bill, and pay me ſo ſuddenly after I have delivered the Cloaths that I have not conveniency to gain ſo much by you as I do by other Gentlemen, who ſtaying a great while after their Cloathes are made, and indeed till they are worn out e're they ask for a Bill, or talk of payment. I have the conveniency to enlarge what and how I pleaſe becauſe it is forgot what was uſed, and they being worn out they have not the conveniency of comparing the Bill and cloaths together, this continued the Taylor is a ſufficient reaſon why I do not care for dealing with you further, and did this Taylor make his excuſes which reflecting rather on his own ill dealing then our Gallants, it paſſed very well with the Company, and our Gallant underſtanding that his credit was juſtified could not be angry, but however he knew the Taylor meant quite contrary to what he had ſaid, and he finding his credit would go no further there, and ſome of his Companions hearing this diſcourſe with him and his Taylor, thought that the Taylor had been mad, and engaged our Gentleman to make uſe of his, and his Taylor upon the report of this, ſoon provided him with ſuch Cloathes as he deſired, but he did not find the diſcourſe made good for he was forced to wait a long time for his Mo-

ny,

ny, and now he had ſpun a fair thread his mony was almoſt all gone, and being Monyleſs he was inforced to look out ſome melancholly place to ſpin away the time in upon this account, he was a great frequenter of the Temple-walks, which were pleaſant, melancholy, and withal ſafe, for there he was out of danger of being arreſted, which he began now to dread, and this walk turned him to a more profitable account as I ſhall preſently relate to you; one day he being very melancholly in his ordinary walk at the Temple, ſees one who had Lodgings in that houſe who was of his acquaintance, they ſalute each other, and ſo walk about for ſome time, at length, the Gentleman tells our Extravagant, that he muſt beg his pardon, for he could no longer walk with him, being ingaged to croſs the water about an affair of Conſequence; it then happened to rain, and therefore our Extravagant told him ſure Sir you will not go before the Shower is over; that matters not much, replyd the Gentleman, for I will ſend for my Cloak, and threreupon called for a Porter and directed him to his Chamber, to command his ſervant to ſend his Cloak, the Porter went and fetched it accordingly, and ſo the Gentleman putting it on, departed.

Our Extravagant obſerving this accordingly, and now being in *Querpo* without a Cloak, thought he had a fair expedient to get one, and if he were diſcovered it would paſs for a Frolick, whereupon he calls a Porter and ſends him to a chamber, whoſe Maſter was of his acquaintance, and whom he ſaw was newly gone out, and ordring the Porter to fetch his Cloak from thence, named himſelf the Maſter of the Chamber; the Porter went, and the Servant who attended in the

Chamber knowing that his Maſter was but newly gone out, and believing he might have occaſion for his Cloak, delivered it to the Porter who carried it to our Extravagant, who now having a Cloak marched off, being provided for againſt a ſhower of Rain that then happened, but withal he knowing it would be dangerous to wear that Cloak which was remarkably known among his acquaintance, having *Gold* Buttons, he marched to *Long-Lane*, and exchanged it for a Coat of a different colour, and had Money to boot, and now having ſucceeded ſo well in this firſt attempt and being reſolved to try further, he thought fit to acquaint this Broker that he had ſeveral Cloaks that he would exchange or ſell to him. The Broker replyed he ſhould be very welcom, and he would deal very honeſtly with him, and ſo he left him, and the next day he plyed his buſineſs, ſo that in the manner aforementioned, taking his due obſervations, gained three Cloaks more, and before the week was at an end he had ten or twelve, being Maſter of ſo many Cloaks he dealt with his Broker, and exchanged for a very handſom ſuit and Cloak, and a pretty ſum of money in his Pocket, and now he was ſet up again.

He again marches to the *Gaming* Houſe, and there in ſhort time looſes all his ill purchaſed Wealth, and now the loſs of ſo many Cloaks together, having been ſo much talked of by the Owners, he thought it would be to no purpoſe to attempt that trick any further, but knowing he had a Merchant his Broker, who would deal with him for any thing of Cloaths, he went to the Play-houſe, and there he nim'd off the *Gold* Buttons from Cloaks, and the *Gold* and Silver Lace from *Gentlewomens* Petycoats, nay ſometimes he

he would cut off great part of the Petticoats, and this trade he did drive a long time, and as faſt as he was Maſter of any ſuch purchaſe he ſold it to the Broker who received all that came, and although he knew our Extravagant could not come honeſtly by theſe purchaſes, yet he ſtill encouraged him to bring him more.

And was ſo kind to him that being arreſted by his Landlord for five pound for Lodging and Diet, he furniſhed him with the ſome, and ſet him at liberty, he promiſing to repay him in a ſhort time, by ſuch things as he ſhould bring in. But he being at liberty and following his old Trade, and finding that although he brought much griſt to the Mill, ſtill carried ſome of his Commodities to the Broker, yet he had but little money of him, for in the firſt place he gave him leſs price, and therewithal ſtop'd moſt part of the money for the old Debt, he conſidering of this was reſolved to leave the Broker and make the beſt of his markets elſewhere, and ſo he did; but the *B*roker ſoon diſcovered him, and in revenge cauſed him to be arreſted and clapt up into the Counter, from whence he had lately redeemed him.

Our Extravagant bearing cloſe enough ſent to his Mother, but ſhe was as deaf to him as he had been to her, and was reſolved to let him bite on the bridle, wherefore he being weary of that Priſon, and underſtanding that *Ludgate* was far better, reſolved to remove himſelf thither, but firſt he again tryed what his Mother would do, but ſhe although the Debt was but four pounds would not pay it, but if he could get off for forty ſhillings, ſhe gave him ſome hopes that ſhe would diſburſe it, but the Broker was inexecrable,

would have all or none which he underſtanding, in a humour writ theſe Lines.

Oh how with miſery I my Mothers Darling
To be thus chackled but for four pound Starling,
By a baſe Broker who I know's a thief,
And merits Newgate *and wants relief,*
And now I'm forc'd to go Guds Dud
To the dwelling of that old King Lud.
If e're I pay him I am ſoundly cheated,
If I ne're pay him then he is defeated,
But if he will take half the debt for whole,
My Mother then i'm ſure will pay the Cole.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

Our Extravagants wild humours whilſt he is in the Compter, from whence he being releaſed falls into the Company of Houſe-Breakers, and by their aſſiſtance robs a Milliners Shop where the Conſtable kept his Watch.

THus did neceſſity cauſe our Extravagant to be witty, and he ſhewing theſe Verſes to ſome friends they promiſed to aſſiſt him with his Mother, but ſhe rather choſe to maintain him in Priſon then pay the debt, all the ſmall moveables, as Cloak, Sword and Belt, Half-Shirts, Bands, Caravats, and all other things that he could ſpare, he parted from and converted them into Ale. Some friends one Faſt day went to ſee him, and he being glad of Company cauſed them to ſtay moſt part of the day, but it being Faſt-day, the Parſon belonging to the Compter, according to cuſtom gave the Priſoners a Sermon, during that time the Cellar door was ſhut up, no drink was delivered out, all were ingaged to aſſiſt and hear the Parſon, our Extravagant was very much troubled at this obſtruction in his drinking, and his friends could not perſwade him to any patience, but he when the Parſon was in the middle of his Sermon, looking out at a Window neer the Pulpit heard him ſay I have two or three points more and then I conclude, I would you would ſaid our Extravagant that we might have ſome drink. The Parſon ſtared at him, and ſo did the people who were near him and heard his words, but he ſeeing the Parſon went on, turned away, ſaying come

ſince

ſince we can have no drink, lets take Tobacco till we can, and ſo went away.

The Parſon after he had done preaching, came to our Extravagant to examine him privately, but his anſwears were ſo Extravagant that there was no good to be done with him, and now not having any employment he gave himſelf wholly to fudling, and when he had not Money, and his Mothers allowance was ſpent, he ſpunge with all Companies, and get acquainted with all the Priſoners that came into the houſe, and this his Impriſonment did make him worſe, for he converſed with all the debauched perſons that were there, and now he could not act, he gloryed in the Relation of his former lewd debaucheries, ſo that at length his Mother at the perſwaſion of friends agreed and paid his Debt and Charges, and took him home to her houſe.

By reaſon of his confinement, he had contracted a diſeaſe, wherefore it was neceſſary for him to ſtay within doors for ſome time, and take Phyſick, but he being reſtored to his former health, was a ſuitor to his Mother for new Cloathes and Money in his Poket, ſhe refuſed him both for the preſent, not thinking it fit as yet to truſt him, wherefore he gave her very ill words.

Thus you may ſee what a hopeful amendment here was, and as he was debauched himſelf, ſo I believe it was his deſire that his Son ſhould be ſo; for as I told you he had been married in the Countrey to a perſon of Quality, but he had baſely left her and rambled about the Town, and though he heard ſoon after his coming to London *that ſhe was brought to bed of a boy, he took no heed nor care about it, but when he was asked by friends whether he had not a deſire to ſee his young Son, he re-*

pyed,

plyed, no, he cared not to ſee him till he was about thirteen or fourteen years of age, and then he only deſired that he might ſee him to enter him at a Baudy-houſe.

By this diſcourſe you may judge of his inclination, and his Mother now refuſing him money, he would purloyn a ſilver Spoon or ſome other piece of plate, and convert it into Pocket mettle, and being once furniſhed with money he would go ſeek out Company. Thoſe that had any grace or honeſty would refuſe to accompany him, and therefore he got into the company of ſuch Bulkers and Pick-pockets as he had known whilſt he was in the Counter, and now he employed his induſtry in contriving ways with them to get a purchaſe, and being one day at a Milliners or Haberdaſhers ſhop, who was related to him, he asked the Maſter to lend him half a piece, he refuſed him the money, but gave him very good counſel, if he had had the grace to receive it, and make uſe of it as he ought. But it was to as little purpoſe to ſpeak to him at that rate, as it had been to endeavor to waſh the Black-more white, both labour in vain, and our Extravagant was ſo angry at his friend for it; that he told him that he might have found ſomewhat elſe to do, and ſince he had not, he would ere long find him ſome other imployment, ſomewhat elſe to talk about, and ſo left him; and now being reſolved what to do, he went and found out ſome of his forementioned acquaintance, Bulkers or Houſe-breakers, and telling them he had a great deſire to aſſiſt them in robbing of the Milliners ſhop, which he told them was very well furniſhed with good ready Mony, Commodities, Silk and Silk ribboning, Gloves and ſuch like wares, they liked the deſign well enough, and now they asked him the place where, but here

appeared

peared a very great obſtacle; for this Milliners ſhop was in ſuch a place as was very difficult to be rob'd, it being the very next door to the Watch-houſe, where the Conſtable and watch generally ſat. This they told him would be dangerous to attempt; but he affirming the more danger the more honour, and that he was reſolved it ſhould be done, and he knew how to do it handſomly if they would be ruled by him; they promiſed their aſſiſtance to the execution of this deſign. It was neceſſary there ſhould be five or ſix perſons, wherefore they making up that company, and he being one of that number, and all things provided according to his order and directions, about ten of the Clock at night they ſet forwards. They divided themſelves into two parts or companies and our Extravagant and two others that went into an Ale-houſe at ſome ſmall diſtance from the Watch houſe. There they called for drink, and ſoon began their work, which was to quarrel with one another, they were armed with ſwords, then they drew and began a ſcufle, one of the three runs up to the Watch, and cries out Murther, Murther; *The Conſtable hearing the noiſe, and doubting there might be ſufficient cauſe, took all his Watch-men to attend Him, but he found no great trouble to appeaſe this quarrel, which being ended, he with his Watch returned to his Rendezvous: In this time the other three had not been idle, but ſo ſoon as ever the Conſtables back was turned, they broke open the Shop Door they intended to rob, and it was not very difficult ſo to do, for it was not ſo ſtrongly barricado'd, as otherwiſe it might have been, becauſe of the ſafety the owner thought he was in, by reaſon of the Conſtables ſitting there.*

The Shop being opened they laid about them, and knowing

knowing where the beſt Commodities lay, they ſoon removed them, and not packing them up ſo handſomly as the Owner would have done for his Cuſtomer, they only threw them together into two Sacks they had brought, which being filled, away they marched; ſo that by ſuch time as the Conſtable and Watch returned, they had diſpatched their buſineſs and were gone.

The Conſtable before morning diſcovered the Shop Door to be open, but did ſuppoſe it had been left ſo, by the negligence of them that ſhut it up, wherefore he left two Watch men at the Door to guard it. The next Morning the Maſter came and wondred to ſee a Guard upon his Door, asked the reaſon, They told him what they ſuppoſed, but he found it much otherwiſe, and although there were his Drawers and Boxes, yet they were empty, there were the Neſts but the Birds were flown, immediately a Hue and Cry went out againſt thoſe parties they could deſcribe, but to little purpoſe, for they eſcaped, and were far enough off from being diſcovered. The next day they ſhared their prize, and converting it into Mony, our extravagant's ſhare came to above 25 l. and now that he was poſſeſſed of ſo conſiderable a Sum Mony, he was deſirous that all the world ſhould know it, and therefore it being inconvenient to carry ſo much about him in Silver, he changed 20 l. into Gold.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Our Extravagant puts a notable cheat upon a Merchant for 100l. *He and one of his Companions being at a Waſherwomans ſee her handſomly revenged on a Bayliff.*

OUr Extravagant being Maſter of this Money, and knowing the difficulty of getting more, was reſolved to look out betimes. He was drinking with ſome Friends at a Tavern neer the Exchange, *London*, and it being the buſie time of the day, Exchange time, ſeveral Companies were put into one Room though at ſeveral Tables: He was not ſo buſie in attending the diſcourſe of his own Company, but that he gave great attention to what was ſaid by that Company who ſat at the next Table. He ſoon underſtood that their diſcourſe was about Money; and that one of the Company expected *Two Hundred Pounds* to be paid him by and by. He hearing that there was buſineſs of that conſequence began to contrive within himſelf, how he might be Maſter of ſome of it; many contrivances he had, and many fancies ran in his brain, but none would do, none would take at preſent, however he and his Company ſtill drank on, and that ſo long that the promiſed 200*l.* was brought thither and paid to the Perſon, who was there ready to receive it. The Money being paid, he who was now Maſter of it, delivers it to a ſervant that attended him, and ordered him to carry it home, and deliver it to his Miſtres, he further obſerved that this Money was intended to be ſuddainly paid away again, for part of a Ship

Ship, which he then agreed with one of the Company to buy of him; and alſo he obſerved that the next day all the Company were to meet there again to partticipate of a Collation that the Perſon who had received the Money was to beſtow on the reſt. All theſe paſſages, and ſeveral others, as their Names, and the qualities of moſt of the Perſons there preſent, he gained from the diſcourſe he had heard. He being thus inſtructed was reſolved to try his wits to the utmoſt, and if poſſible be Maſter of ſome of this Money, and that without the help, advice, or aſſiſtance of any other. He beats his brains about it all that night, and the next day making himſelf as ſpruce and fine as he could, and being laden withthe rich Cargoe of *Twenty pieces* of *Gold*, and ſufficient ſpending Money beſides, he ſailed on to the *Exchange*, and there knowing ſeveral of the Yeſterdays Company both by ſight and name, he ſoon found out the Perſon who was to ſell part of the Ship, and underſtanding that he was a Sea-Captain, who wanted Owners, he bore up to him, and tels him that he was willing to hold a part with him, whereupon the Captain invites him to their intended Dinner, and he accepting rhe invitation, and being come thither upon a farther diſcourſe, he ſeemed pretty well content with the bargain, and told the Captain that at the next days Exchange he would reſolve him about it. Their diſcourſe being ended, Dinner was called for but it not being yet ready, he who was the Invitor ſeemed to be very angry for the delay, for ſaid he, I commanded it to be ready between *One* and *Two*, and now by my *VVatch* it is between *Two* and *Three*, our Merchant ſeeing a *VVatch* drawn, ſaid, I pray *Sir* let me ſee it, and having

ving it in his hand, highly commended it for its richneſs and good workmanſhip, for it had two Gold Caſes, and deſired to know the Price what it did coſt, the Owner replyed *Twenty Pound*, I like it ſo well, replyed our Merchant, that I wiſh I had ſuch another for the Price, (and continued he to the Owner) I ſhall be much obliged to you, if you will lend it me for *One* Hour or *Two*, to ſhew it to my Watchmaker, who is now in hand with one for me; and *Sir*, that you may aſſure your ſelf of the return of it to you, here is *Twenty Pieces* of good old Gold, I will leave in your hands: When would you have it, replyed the Owner, even juſt now, ſaid our Merchant, for I muſt needs ſtep home inſtantly, and I can call on my Watchmaker, by the way, and when I return to you hither, which I promiſe you ſhall be within *two* Hours, I will bring it and return it you. I, but *Sir*, ſaid the Captain, I hope you will not leave us, but ſtay and Dine here, indeed I cannot, ſaid our Merchant you muſt pardon me at preſent, an urgent affair calls me, but in *Two* Hours I ſhall have diſpatched it, and then I will return and drink a Glaſs of Wine with you. The Owner of the Watch ſeeing that he made theſe excuſes, and not diſtrusting his Watch, as he had little reaſon to do, becauſe he had more than the worth in his hands, delivered the Watch to our Counterfeit, who takes his leave, and calling a Coach, cauſed the Coach-man to drive directly to the houſe of the Owner of the *Watch*; when he came there, he asked for the good Woman, and without any circumſtantial diſcourſe, tells her that he left her Husband in ſuch a Tavern, with ſuch Company, and that he had gone through with his bargain about the *Sixteenth* part of ſuch

ſuch a Ship; that the Sum agreed upon was 100*l.* that the Captain who was to receive it had ordered it to him, who was now come for it; and Miſtreſs (ſaid he) I ſhould give you ſuch ſufficient tokens for the delivery of it, as I hope your will do it without any diſtruſt. Therefore in the firſt place, ſaid he, the 100*l.* I muſt have, is part of 200*l.* your Husband did receive yeſterday, and ſent home to you by your Servant, and to convince you of the truth of all, as an infallible token, I have here brought your Husband's *VVatch*, and thereupon he drew it out, and ſhew'd it to her. She knowing that all he had ſaid was true, and viewing the *watch*, & knowing that to be the ſame, and finding that he told his tale without any heſitation, ſtopping, or ſtamering, did not at all diſtruſt him, but went up ſtairs & fetch down the Money. He ordered the Coach-man to drive him to his Quarters, and there he ſecured the Money, and thanked his Stars for thus favourably aſſiſting him in this affair, where he had come off without ſo much as a Rub, and that better than he expected, for he did ſuppoſe that to purchaſe this 100*l.* it would have coſt him the Twenty Pieces of Gold, for he expected that the good Woman would have deſired him to leave the *VVatch* behind with her, as her warrant for the delivery of the Money, which if ſhe had, he could not have refuſed it, and now he had Money and *VVatch* too, wherefore having had ſo good ſucceſs he was reſolved to try his good fortune a little further, and therefore away he went to the Tavern, where he had left the Captain and Owner of the *VVatch*.

They had hardly Dined, ſo that he had part of a good Dinner, was welcomed by all the Company,

who in his abſence had enquired of one another, who this unknown Merchannt was, and ſeeing him ſo full of Gold, they doubted not his ability, but they were reſolved to treat him handſomly, which they did, and the Dinner being ended, he re-deliverd the *Watch*, and received back his Gold, with a Complement from the Owner, that he begg'd his pardon for taking any thing as an engagement, and deſiring his further acquaintance; but Dinner being ended, and a good quantity of Wine bruſh'd off, they promiſing to meet the next day at the *Exchange*, departed, I ſuppoſe they all did meet, eſpecially the owner of the *Watch*, to enquire of the Captain, for his Merchant. and alſo the Captain, to conclude his begun bargain with our Counterfeit Merchant, but he, although he had made them a fair promiſe to meet, yet he came not there, he had other Eggs on the Spit, his affairs lay now at the other end of the Town, and although he had made as profitable a bargain the laſt Exchange-time, as moſt Merchants that came thither, yet he had no mind to return thither in haſt. But with all the haſt he could, he removed his Money and Quarters to the other end of the Town, and that he might paſs the more ſecurely undiſcovered, he left off his Merchant-like habit, wherein he had performed his exploit, and put on Cloaths more modiſh and gallant, with a Sword and Belt, and large Perriwig, in this diſguiſe he paſſed without any diſcovery, by thoſe who ſought out for him, but one of his Extravagant acquaintance meeting him, although thus accoutred, ſoon knew him, and believing that ſome Extraordinary adventure had fallen out, was very deſirous to be acquainted with it, wherefore that they might compare notes together

gether, they put in to the next Tavern, our Extravagant's Companion ſaw by this diſguiſement, that there was ſomewhat in the wind, ſomewhat extraordinary had befallen him, and withall that he was ſhy in declaring it, wherefore to the end that he might induce him, to tell him how ſquares went with him, he told him that he had had a very luck ſince they parted laſt; for, ſaid he, I met with a brave Prize within theſe two days which I carried off with very little hazard or danger, and this it was, I was ſauntring about the ſtreets, to ſee and obſerve where I might get a purchaſe, and at length I obſerved a Coach was called for, it was neer *Aldgate*, and it was juſt about the dusk of the Evening, I having nothing elſe to do, reſolved to ſee what Company was to go in the Coach, and therefore waited not long, but ſaw it was only a Woman and a Child, and withall there was two bundles of Linnen. I ſeeing there was no more Company, was reſolved to be Maſter of one of thoſe bundles, neither did I queſtion to do it with eaſe enough, I obſerved which way the Coach drove, and went along with it. There was ſo many Paſſengers with Lanthorns, Links and Torches walking backwards and forwards, that I was forced to Laquey this Woman till the Coach had brought her to the Stocks in the *Poultrey*, there obſerving it to be a narrow dark place, and no lights neer me, and having my purchaſe in my eye, I ſoon had it in my hand and ſlapt it under my Coat.

The Woman ſaw me ſeize it, and therefore cryed out immediatly, but the Coachman not preſently hearing of her, and he driving on towards *Cheapſide*, I thought it would be neceſſary for me to march off

another way, and ſo I did, returning back again, but not the very ſame way we had come, that is, down *Cornhil*, but now returning back by *Lombard-Street*, I did hear the Woman cry out, Hold Coachman, I am rob'd! but I ſuppoſe he driving one way, and I running another, I was got to *Gracious-ſtreet*, and he to *Cheapſide* before he ſtopt, and ſo then it was to no purpoſe to look after me, for I ſoon croſſed *London* Bridge, and went to my old Quarters in *Southwark*; when I came there I undid my ſardle, but it was filled with ſuch a parcel, as I underſtood very little, I think there was 100 ſeveral pieces of fowl Linnen, which upon examination, I found to be Childbed Linnen, and withall there was Blankets and Mantles, but above all there was the *Unum neceſſarium*, a parcel of good ready Money, *Ten Pieces* of good old Gold, and *Five Pounds* in Silver, the ſight of this pleaſed my eyes, and I thanked my ſtars for my good fortune. Although (continued he) I knew not ſo well what to do with the Linnen, as I did with the money, yet I knew it was too good to be thrown away, and that it would good ready money, but in the pickle it was in, I thought it not convenient to offer it to ſell, wherefore I reſolved to have it waſhed, and in order thereto, ſaid he, I am now going to an old acquaintance, a Woman who gets the beſt part of her living by waſhing and ſtarching, and I intend to intruſt her not only to waſh and ſtarch, but alſo to ſell this Commodity for me. And (this concluded he) is my buſineſs at preſent, and now I have told you mine, I pray acquaint me with yours.

Our Extravagant underſtanding from his acquaintance, that he had lately gained a Prize, and by that concluding that he was not in want of money, ſo that

he

he was not obliged to impart any of his Prize to him, which is a cuſtomary thing between Perſons of that quality, he therefore without much perſwaſions acquainted him with his late good fortune in the adventure of the 100 *l.*

This diſcourſe us'd, the buſineſs of drinking being over, our Extravagant's Companion deſired him to go with him a little way to the old Laundreſſes, he ſpake off, that he might deliver his Pack of ſmal things to her ordering and diſpoſe, he was not hard to be entreated, wherefore away they went together. But when they came there, they found the old Woman all in tears, for ſhe being indebt a Sum of Money, that ſhe was not able to pay, and an Attachment having been brought againſt her Goods, ſhe not having Money or skill to defend the Suit, her adverſary had obtained Judgement againſt her, and thereupon the execution was deliver'd into the Bayliffs hands, who at this very minute that our Extravagants came, was come alſo to ſeize the Goods, and this was the occaſion of the old Womans Lamentation.

She gave the Bayliff all the good words ſhe could, and they not prevailing, ſhe fell to railing and ſcolding, but it was all one to him, he minded her not, but proceeded in executing his Office, and delivered out to his Man all the poor Womans goods, one piece after an another, and there was nothing now remaining, but a little which ſtood on a Trevet over the Fire, and the Utenſils of the Chimney. He told her he muſt have the Kettle, but ſhe might take out the Cloathes, ſhe ſaying they were none of hers, but ſhe refuſing to empty the Kettle, he took it off from the Fire, and threw the water and Cloathes that was in it about the houſe:

The

The old Woman ſeeing this, and being reſoved to be revenged on him, took the Tongs in her hands, and with them took up the Trevet, which was red hot, and lifting it up, clapt it about the Bayliffs neck, ſaying, *Since you will have all, then you ſhall have all.* He was quickly ſo ſenſible of the fire, that he roared and cryed out like a Mad-man, and believing that it would burn him to death, for it had already made his fleſh fry, to ſave his Neck and Shoulders, was forced to take it hot as it was, into his hands, to throw it off: This adventure was like to have proved Tragical to the hard-hearted Bayliff, who with much difficulty diſingaged himſelf. But our two Extravagants were extreamly well-pleaſed with the Waſher-womans Revenge, as we hope the *Reader* will be; and now we ſhall put an end to this *Fourth Part*: And, if (as we hope) you are pleaſed with what is already written, we ſhall in ſhort time give you greater pleaſure and ſatisfaction in the Continuation of our Extravagants adventures, which ſhall be fully finiſhed in a *Fifth* and *Laſt* Part.

FINIS.

B L